jam Marti, Quam Mercurio.



The The the and It are S. Walter Rab

jam Marti, Quam Mercurio.



The The the and It are S. Walter Rab

REMAINS

of 1387.a.6.

Sir Walter Raleigh;

viz.

Maxims of State.

Advise to his Son: his Sons advise to his Father.

His Sceptick.

Observation concerning the causes of the Magnificencie and Opulency of Cities.

His Letters to divers persons of quality.

With

The Prerogative of Parliaments, being a Difpute between a Counfellour of State and a Justice of Peace.

LONDON,

Princed for William Sheares Innier , in Weltminfter Hall, 1657.





ig Wednelodertlell, 1617.

I

MAXIMS

OF STATE.

With Instructions to his SON, and the SONS advice to his aged FATHER.

Whereunto

Is added Observations touching Trade and Commerce with the Hollander and other Nations, Proving that our Sea and Land Commodities inrich and strengthen other Countries against our own.

By Sir Walter Raleigh.

LONDON.

Printed for Will. Shears Junior at the Blue Bible in Bedford Street in Govent-garden, 1656,



AND THE STREET, WAS

D.C.V. D.C.

The Contents.

	Page
F Government.	1
Of Policie. Of Monarchie.	2
Of Monarchie.	3
Of Aristocracie,	or Se
natorie State.	, 50
	3
Of Free State, or Popular St	are. o
Of Tyrannie.	7
Of Olygarchiesor the Gover	nment
of afen.	ibid.
Of a Common-wealth.	8
Of causes of States, and Con	imon-
wealths ingenerall.	10
Of Founding a State.	ibid.
	ate or
	D 7 -12
Common-wealth.	15
Of Mysteries or Sophisms.	ibid
Of Axioms or Rules of pr	reser
ving a State.	I-
100	9.
The state of the state of the state of	Rules
1	1 3

The Contents.

Rules for avelor to Hora	ditarie
Times for prejer-	untaric
ving of a	2
Rules for prefer-SHere ving of a Kingdom Cond	mered
Ving dame band savia	ma and Con
A my woms hereditatie	re prejer
King doms hereditarie a	dering of
Prince.	ibid
Kingdoms new gotten,	w naveha
Kinguoms new gottens	parcon
sed by force, are presen	ved by 10
Rules.	21
Rules politich of Tyrant	. 41
Californ Cal	
Rules politick of Tyrant Sophisms of a barbaron	s ana pro
Telleatyranny	A 3
Sophisms of the Cophil	tically or
Cultural Toward to be	ald un bis
Sophisms of the sophism Subtile Tyrant, to h	ola up mi
Of preservation of an A	Triftocra-
cie.	53
Of Carliff	, , ,
of prejervati- Sopnim	
on of an Oly-5	ibid
of preservati- Sophisms on of an Oly- garchie, by Rules.	3
Of Comment of Succes	in gove-
Of Conversion of States	in gene-
rall.	50
Causes of conversions of S of two sorts: Generall	tates are
of two Carte · Generall	and Par-
of the joins. Other all	List
ticular.	ibid.
Particular causes of Co	nver lion
	of
	-1

TheContents

at Coare and of and Court	
of State, are of two forts. Of sedition. Canses of sedition are of two	.00
Of sedition.	01
Canses of sedition are of two	orts,
	bid.
Of Alteration without violence	2.64
A Method, how to make use o	fihe
Book before, in the reading	
the storie.	67
Old age is not ever unfit for	oub-
lick Government,	bid.
Example of the like practice	e in
Charls the Fifth.	68
Of observation for the Affire	ma-
tive and the Negative.	
Of defence for David in marry	ing
	70
	. ~

ferof a bid. ha-10 35

42 or his 46 ra-52

bid.

ne-

are aroid.

Politicall Nobility.

Of Ador ijah aspiring to the Kingdom 71

K 4 0)



The Contents.

Observations.

Ofways of such as aspe	re to the
Kingdom, and marks	o discern
them.	73
Politicall Prince.	75

The

the ern 73

The TABLE of the Chapters contained in

Sr WALTER RALEIGH'S

INSTRUCTIONS

to his SON.

CMAP. Page.
Virtuous persons to be made choice of Friends.
Great care to be had in the choosing of a Wife.
Wisest men have been abused by flatterers.
Privac Quarrels to be avoided.

Three Rules to be observed for the preservation of amans estate. What sort of servants are most sit

to be entertained. Brave rags wear soonest out of fa-

(hion.

Riches not to be fought by evil means.

ibid.

What

The TABLE.

What Inconveniences happen to Such as delight in Wine.

Let God be thy protectour and directour in all thy Actions.

The Sceptick doth neither affirms neither deny any Position but doubteth of it, and proposeth his Reason against that which is affirmed or denied, to justifie his not Consenting.

Observations concerning the canses of the Magnificencie and O-

pulencie of Cities.

Safetie for defence of the people and their goods in and near a Town.

Canses that concern the Magnifi-

cencie of a Citie.

That the Seat of Government is upheld by the two great Pillars thereof, viz. Civile Justice, and Martiall Policie, which are framed out of Husbandry, Merchandise, and Gentry of this Kingdom.

Sir Walter Raleigh's letter to Mr



The TABLE.

Secretary Winwood before his

Journey to Guiana.
To his Wife 110m Guiana.
To Sir Ralph Winwood.
To his Wife copied out of his own

di-

mo

but

his

ifie

10-

ople

ifi-

t is

lars

dry

Mr Sehand writing. To his Wife after Condemnation.

To King James at his return from Guiana.

His third Letter to Secretary Winwood.

His Letter to PrinceHenry touching the modell of a Ship.

His Speech immediately before he was beheaded.

Sir VValter Raleight's Observations touching Trade and Commerce with the Hollander and other Nations, Proving that our Sea and Land Commodities inrich and strengthen other Countreys against our own.

FINIS.



- California - All Francis G T S Constitute Commence Company dishards han it so V Valid Ranghe C tien architectus as Con-State of the state of the fact of treper part on from orange

MAXIMS

OF

STATE.

GOVERNMENT.

G

OVERNMENT is of two forts, 1. Private, of himse f. Sobriety. Of his Family; called Occo-

2. Publich, of the Common-wealth, called Palicy A man must first Govern himself, ere he be fit to Govern a Family: And his family, e're he be fit to bear the Government in the Common-wealth,

0



of Policie.

olicie is an Art of Government of Common-wealth, and fome par of it according to that State, of form of Government, wherein it is for

led for the publick good.

State, is the frame or fet order of Common-wealth, or of the Gover nours that rule the fame, especially o the chief and Sovereign Governou that commanderh the reft.

The State or Sovereignty confifted

in five points.

1. Making or anulling of Laws.

- 2. Creating and disposing of Magi firates.
 - 3. Power over life and death.

4. Making of War, or Peace.

5. Highest or last appeal. Where thefe five are, either in on or in more, there is the State.

These five points of State, rest

ther in,

1. One Monarchie or Kingdom.

2. Some few chief men for viru and wildom, called an wireftocracie.

3. Many, called a Free-State, Popular State.

These three forts of Government

we respect to the common good, and erefore are just, and Lawfull States.

nrof ic par ate,

is fer

er of

Gover ally o crnou

fifted -

NS.

Magi

n o

eft e

m. viru cie.

ue.

nmen

hav

These 3. degenerate into 3. other overnments viz.

Monar-1 ic.

(I. Tyrrannie.

2. Oligarchie.

Arific- >into

3. Common-wealth or Government of all the common

and bafer fort, and therefore called a Common-wealth by an usurped Nick-

Popular Pate,

I name.

These all respect their own, and or the publick good, and therefore are Ilcd Baftard Governments.

Monarchie.

Monarchie, or Kingdem, is the Gevernment of a Sate by one ead, or chief, tending to the comon benefit of all.

Mos

Sir walter Raseigh's Of Policie.

Policie is an Art of Government of Common-wealth, and some

THIS. BOOK IS

PRINT LOST BINDIN

BEST RES

POSSIBL

Maxims of State.

ave respect to the common good, and erefore are just, and Lawfull States.

ent of Thele 3. degenerate into 3. other

IS VERY

BOUND

TIN

MS

RESULT

BLE

ha benefit of all.

B 2 Mo-

Sir walter Raleigh's

of Policie.

Policie is an Art of Government of of it according to that State, o form of Government, wherein it is fer

led for the publick good.

State, is the frame or fet order of Common-wealth, or of the Gover nours that rule the fame, especially o the chief and Sovereign Governou that commandeth the reft.

The State or Sovereignty confifted

in five points.

1. Making or anulling of Laws.

2. Creating and disposing of Magi ftrates.

3. Power over life and death.

4. Making of War, or Peace. 5. Highest or last appeal.

Where thefe five are, either in or or in more, there is the State.

These five points of State, rest

ther in,

1. One Monarchie or Kingdom. 2. Some few chief men for viru

and wifdom, called an Arthocracie.

3. Many , called a Free-State, Popular State.

These three forts of Governmen



3

we respect to the common good, and crefore are just, and Lawfull States.

e par ove

is fer

er of

lly o

fifted

vs.

Magi

cft

m. viru

11,9

met

har

These 3. degenerate into 3. other overnments wit.

Monar-1

1. Tyrrannie.

2. Oligarchie.

Arific- Sinto

or Government of all the common

Popular

all the common and baser sort, and therefore called a Common-wealth by an usurped Nicket

These all respect their own, and of the publick good, and therefore are lied Bastard Governments.

Monarchie.

A Monar bie, or Kingdom, is the Givernment of a Sate by one ead, or chief, tending to the comon benefit of all.

2

Me

Monaribie, or Kingdons, are of the forts rouching the right, or possess of them, 217.

1. Heredtray, by defcent, as

English French, &c.

2. Elettive, by fuffrage of the oth

3. nixt, or of both kinds, with descent, yet not tied to the next bloud, as the ancient Jew sh state.

Monarchies are of two forts touch their power, or Authority, w?.

of ordering all State matters, both peace and war, doth by law & cust appertain to the Prince, as in the gish K ngdom, where the Prince hapower to make Laws League, & W. To create Magistrates; to pardon lift Of appeal, & c. Though to give a tentment to the other degrees, de have a softing in making Laws, ever subject to the Princes pleasur nor Negative will.

no full power in all the points or me ters of State, as the Military King thath not the Sovereignty in time peace, as the making of Laws, of But in War only, as the Polar

Kings.

11

of the

25 1

e oth

viq.

next

Ale.

uchi

por

both

cuft

he B

ce h

W

on li

a co

eafun

at h

r m

ng the

1.

Aristocracy, or Senatory

N Ar floracie is the Government of a Common-wealth by forme imperent number of the better fort, eferred for wisdom and other virtues the publick good.

Aristoracies are of three forts, viz.
here the Senatours are chosen, for
Victur, Riches, and the common
od, as the Venetian.

2. Victor, and the publick good thout respect of wealth, as some-mes the Roman, when some of the entitours were statched from the ough, and some from the Schools

3 Vr ue and wea'th more respecting their private, than their publick nod, which inclineth towards an Olearchie, or the Government of the licher or Nobler fort, as in Rome towards the end.

B 3 111

Sir Walter Raleigh's

I I I.

Free-State, or Popular State.

The Popular State is the Government of a State by the choise for of people, tending to the publick good of all forts; viz. wth durespect of the better, Nobler, and

Richer fort

In every Felt State, Some part the Government is, or ought to be im parted to the people; As in a King dom, a voice or suffrage in making Laws; and fomtimes also, in levying of Arms (if the charge be great and the Prince forced to borrow hel of his Subjects) the matter rightly may be propounded to a Parliament that the tax may feem to have pro ceeded from themselves. So consultations, and some proceedings in Iudicial matters, may in part be referred to them, The reason, least seeing them felves to be in no number, nor of rec koning, they mislike the stare, or kind of Government: And where the multitude is discontented, there must needs bemany Enemies to the prefent State. For which cause, Tyrants, Cwhich



hich allow the people, no manner of aling in State matters) are forced to reave them of their wits and weans, and all other means whereby ey may refift, or amend themselves, in Rusbland, Turkey, &c.

IV. Tyrannie.

overe

choife o the

and

irt

e in

King

akin

vying

reat

hel

ghtly

ment

Pro

ules.

dici

ed m

reckind

mul

muft

preints, high A Tyrannie is the swerving, or differing of a Monarchie, or the Grverument of one, tending not the publick good, but the private befit of himself, & his followers. As in a Russell & Turkish Government, where a state and Wealth of other orders, a employed onely to the upholding of the greatness of the King or mperour. This is the worst of all the astard states, because it is the pervering of the best Regiment, to wit, of a state, which resembleth the Socreign Government of God himself.

ligarchie, or the Gavernment of a few.

A Notiga chie is the fwerving, or the corruption of an Arifocracie;

or the Government of some sew, that an of the Wealthier or Nobler sort, with out any respect of the publick good. The chief end of these Governous, their own greatness and enriching And therefore their manner is, to proper fit means to uphold their E late. This State is not wholly so bad, as the Tyrannie, and yet worse than the Common wealth, because it respected the good of a few.

VI.

Common wealth.

A Common-wealth is the Iwerving depravation of a Free, or posses State, or the Government of the who multitude of the ba e and poorer for without respect of the other Orders.

These two States, to wit; The Us garchie, and Common wielth, are ver adverse the one to the other, and have many bickerings between them. Fathat the Richer or Nobler sort, suppose a right or superiority to appertain unter them in every respect, because they are superiour, but in some respects onely to wit, in Riches, Birth, Parentage, St. On the other side, the Common people suppose, there ought to be an equal to



ar an

good

ch ne

o pre

tates

in the

100 uli

whol

r for

ers.

e Us

han

Fa

ppole

unte

cy are

onely

e, esta

ualty

n all other things, and some State marers; because they are equal with the
lich or Noble, touching their Liberrie,
thereas indeed neither the one nor the
ther are simply equall or superiour, as
outhing Government and fitness thereinto, because they are such, to wit, beause they are Rich, Noble, Free, Greause, &c. and so have fit parts to Gaern a State.

The feverall States are fometimes ixed, and inter-wrought one with the ther, yet ever io, as that the one hath he preheminent predomination over he other, as in the humours and comlexions of the body. So in the Roman rate, the people had their Plubilita. nd gave the suffrage in the election of Mag ftrates : Yet the Sinate (as the tass flood) for the most part swayed he Stare, and bare the chief rule. So n the Venetian State, the Duke feemeth o represent a Monarch, and the Senate be his Councell: Yer the Duke hath o power in State matters, but is like a head fet on by art, that beareth no brain. And fo that State is Senatoricalt Aristocraticall.

B 5 Caufes

Canses of States and Commonmealths in general.

Causes of State who to be common with sare of 3. forts, with sare state who have a state.

or setling a 2. Part, State where and their to be considered.

2. Perserving a State.

3. Changing, and altering a

Founding a State.

In founding a State 1. Proportion, are to be confidered 2. things. 2. Parts.

Reportion, is a just measure or Meadiocritic of the State, whereby it is framed & kept in that Order, as that neither it exceed nor be defective in his kind, to wit, so that a Monarch be not too Monarchical, nor strict, or absolute, as the Russe Kings, nor Aristocatical, that is over-mated or eclipsed by the Nobilitie, as the Scottish Kings dom, but ever respective to the other degrees. That Aristocracie be not to thagnificent nor invite to it self, but com:

mmunicate with the people fome amodities of State or Government, the Venetians and fometimes the Roallowed the people to elect certain afure. g ftrates out of themselves, to have arn, Tribune, to make Pubifena, &c. So their Free-S are or Commo - wealth that it ities, mot over popular, viz. That it de-Is not too much the richer, wifer, nor meder fort; but admit them to offiring a with a Causion out of the rules and Reries of that State. That they feek Iteration of the present State. The fon, because the moderate States in ir several kinds (as all other things t observe the mean) are best framed their continuance, because they e less cause of grudge, envy, and cting the wealth, Henour, and Lie Mesory, which they see in others that by it ween the State; and so are less subject er, as so stirs and commotions, and easiest Ctive in their present S:ate wherein h bettey are fer.

.

OCT A.

nga

ther

t to

but

rino

Parts.

He parts of the State, or those Magiftrates that bear place or fway in the publick Government. arts or partakers of Publick Governa t, are

1. Coun-



and Peace, Magistrates, %c. in admitting of whom there ought to be a most special care, that they may be mene pert in miver of Pucie, because a their Trade and Vocation, as men use their Art of Navigation, and Husband men, &c. And so the corrarie.

2. Magistrates and Officers, which are to be executioners of that which consulted, and found to be expedie for the Common-nesses of Magistrate than they be such as fit that kinds of Magistrate than they be such as fit that kinds of Magistrate than they be such as fit that kinds of their communice, and the manner of their communice, and the manner of their election or appointing, by whom, out whom, and in what manner they

chofen.

3. Judges; To determine in Cin and Criminal matters, where are to observed, out of whom they are to chosen; what kinds are necessary, as the manner of Judgement and Judio proceeding.



confus y to Wa n admi e a mo men c nuse it en use hips, su and n the co

which which pedier in area iffrare kinds

ir con Magie fraces are to out be ob-

re to l

1. kinds of Magifirates 25. which are to be fuch & of that kind as agree with the Sate, as Conful's for a year, and not perpetual Dictatours in a Senatorie State. Pretors, & Genzler emanners & orders of the people.

For a KingFor a

Inferiour, as sonfervatours of Peace, Confta-

Overleers of youth, that take care for their education for civil and war-like exercise.

Clarks

Six Walter R: leigh's

14

clarks of the Market that provide for the quantity, and price of victual.

Ediles for Buildings,

Streets, Bounds.

Questours, or Trea. furers, to keep and dispence the publick Treasury.

Attuaries, or Recorders, which keep the publick Record .

Goalers to keep prifin; and Prifoners.

Survey urs of woods and fields, or. I. As Bishops or P.

Ec- flours, Elders, wardens. clefiafts. 2. Time of Magifrates, whereof fome are perpetual, some for a time, wiq. for more years, a year, halfa year, according to the necessity of the Cimmon-wealth, and not perpetual ; or at leaft not Hereditary in 2 Kingdom, Yearly in an Ariftscracie, or half

yearly



cal.

Market or the rice of

Trea.

Recor-

pri-

pre-

ving

States

hings

bui-

Pa-

for ore

not aft

an alf

yearly in a Free-State.

Manner of choice, by whom and how to be chosen, where especially they are to be chosen by suffrage, and not by Lot.

cuses preserving a State, or Common-wealth.

> s. Myleries, or Sophifms

1. General to all States. 2. Partien-

lar for every several

2. Rules, or

1. General, for all States.

for every

My steries, or Sophisms.

Arfteries, or Supplifus of State,
Are certain secret practises, either
the avoiding of danger, or average
fuch effects as tend to the preservation



Sir Walter Rakigh's vation of the prefere State, as it is fer or founded.

State Mifteries are of two forts.

1. Generall : That pertain to all States; as first, to provide by all means, that the same degree, or part of the Common-wealth, do not exceed both in Quantity and Quality. In Quantity, as that the number of the Nobility , or of great persons, be not more, than the State or Common-wealth can bear. In Quality, as that none grow in wealth, Liberry, Honours, &c. more than it is meet for that degree; For as in weights, the heavier weights bear down he Scale: So in Common, wealths, that part of degree that excelleth the reft in Quility and Q atsur, over wayeth the rest after it, whereof follow alterations, and conventions of sare. Secondly, to provide by all means, that the middle fort of people exceed both the extreams, (viz.) of Nobility and Gentry, and the base rascal, and beggarly fort. For this maketh the State constant and firm, when both the Expeans are tied together by a middle fort, as it were with a band, as for a ly conspiracie of the rich and beggarly fort together, it is not to be feared. To these two points, the Particuit is fe

to all

means

of the

d both

uantuy.

ity , or

an the

ar. In

ealth,

han it

as in

bear

mon.

t ex-

0.48

bere-

fions

yall

ople

) of

ica',

the

oth

as

cg-

ar-

C104

las

TS.

lar rules in Sophisms of every Commonwealth, are to be applied.

2. Particular : That ferve for prefervation of every common weil h, in that form of Stat wherein it is fetled, as in a Kingdom. That the Nobili y may be accustomed to bear the Government of the Prince, especially such as have their dwelling in remote places from the Princes eye, it is expedient to call them up at certain times to the Princes Court, under precence of doing them honour, or being defirous to fee, and enjoy their prefence; and to have their children, especially their eldeft, to be attendant upon the Prince, as of special favour towards them and theirs, that fo they may be trained up in duty and obedience towards the Prince, and be as Hollages for the good hehaviour, and faithfull dealing of their Parents, especially, if they be of any fuspected note. To that end ferves the Perfin practife, in having a Band, or Train of the Satrapa's children, and other Nobles to arrend the Court; which was well imitated by our Train of Heachman, if they were of the Nobler fort. Again, fometimes to borrow fmall fums of his Subjeds, and to pay them again, that he may after borrow greater

1

greater fums and never pay: So in an Oliganbie, leaft it decline to a Popular State, they deceive the people with this and the like Sophime, (viz. They compel their own fo t, to wit, the rich men, by great penalties, to frequent their Assemblies for choosing of Magistrates, for provision of Armour, warlike Exercises, making an Execution of Laws, & . By that means feeming. to bear a hard hand over the richer, but to fuffer the poorer, and meaner fort to be absent, and to neglect those Affemblies under pretence, that they will not draw them from their bufiness, and private earnings: Yet withall to cite thither fome few of them, (vit.) fo many as are casily over-matched by the richer fort, to make a flew, that they would have the people or poorer fort, partakers likewise of those matters, yet tertifying those that come to their Assemblies, with the tediousnesse of consultations, greatnesse of Fines, if they should mis-do, to the end, to make them unwilling to come again, or to have to do with those Consultations, by which means, the richer fort do ftill, govern the State, with the peoples liking, and good contentment.

Axioms.



Aixoms.

Axioms
or Nules
of preferving the State
are,

n an

with

They

rich

uene

Ma

war-

tion

her,

ofe

hey

cfs.

to

.)

128

rer

at-

to

ffe

if

ke

to

H,

i-

5.

1. General, that serve for all Comon-wealths.

the State 2. Particular, that serve are, for every several State.

General Rules.

He fi ft and principal Rule of Price to be observed in all States, is to profes, & practife, & maintain the true worship & Religio of Almighty God prescribed untous in his word, which is the chief end of all Government. The Axiom, That God be obeyed simply without exception, though he command that which feemeth unreasonable, and absurd to Humane policy; as in the fews Camm w- wealth : That all the men should repair yearly to one place to worship God four times, leaving none to defend their coast, though being befer with many Enemies. Not to fow the feventh year, but to fuffer the ground to rest untilled without respect or sear of famine, 600.

a .To

2. To avoid the causes of Conversion, whereby rears are over thrown, that are set down in the Title of conversions; For that Common weight (as naturall bodies) are preserved by avoiding that which hurteth the health and State thereof, and are so cured by contrary med cines.

be created or continued, contrarie to the Laws and policie of that state. As that in a Se at, there be not created a perpetual Diffator, as Cafar in Rome, In a Kingdom, that there be no Senare, or Convention of equall power with the Prince in State matters, as in Po-

lan1.

4. To create such Matisfries as love the State as it is setled, and take heed of the contrarie practise, as to advance Popular persons in a Kingdom, or Artificracie. And secondly, to advance such as have skill to discern what doth preserve, and what hurteth or altereth the present State.

5. To that end to have certain Officers to pry abroad, and to ob erve such as do not live and behave themselves in fit fort, agreeable to the present State, but desire rather to bee under some other form, or kind of Government.

s. Te



verti

own.

con-

h (23

void-

and

con.

Arite

ric to

c. As

ted a

ec. In

re, or

the

Pa

love

heed

ance

Arto

ance

doth

ereth

Offi-

fuch

es in

lake.

fome

6. To take heed that Magistracies be not fold for money, nor bribe in their Offices, which is especially to be observed in that (ommor wealth, which is governed by a few of the richer fort; For if the Magistrate gain nothing but his Common Fees, the common fort, and fuch as want honour, take in good part that they be not preferred; and are glad rather that themselves are suffered to intend private business, But if the Magifirate buy and fell matters, the common people are doubly grieved, both because they are debar'd of those preferments, and of that gain they fee to grow by them, which is the cause that the German Ol garchies continue fo firm, for both they fuffer the poorer fort to grow into wealth, and the richer fort are by that means freed, and fecured from being under the poor.

7. To take heed that the State, as it is fetled and maintained, be not overfltiet, nor exceed in his kind; (w.z.)
That a Kingdom be not too Monarchicall, nor a Popular State too Popular.
For which cause it is good, that the Maggifrates sometimes yield of his right touching honour, and behave themselves familiarly with those that are equall unto them in other parts, though

in.

inferiour for place and office; And fometimes popularly with the common people, which is the cause that fome Common wealths, though they be very fimply , and un kilfully fer , ye continue firm, because the Magistrato behave themselves wisely, and with due respect towards the rest that are without honour; and therefore some kind of Moderate Popu arty is to be used in every Common-wealth.

8. To take heed of small beginnings, and to meet with them even at the first, as well touching the breaking and altering of Laws, as of other rules which concern the continuance of ever ry severall State. For the disease and alteration of a Common-wealth, doth not happen all at once, but grows by degrees, which every common wit cannot discein, but men expert in

POLICIE.

9. To provide, that that part be a ver the greater in number and power, which favours the State as now it stands. This is to be observed as 2 very Oracle in all Commonwealths.

10. To observe a mean in all the degrees, and to fuffer no part to exceed, or decay overmuch, As first for preferments, to provide that they be 12ther fmall and short, than great and long; and if any be grown to overmuch greatness, to withdraw or diminish some part of his honour. Where these Sephifms are to be practifed (viz.) to do it by parts and degrees; to do it by occasion, or colour of law, and not all at once. And if that way ferve not, to advance some other, of whose virtue and faithfulness, we are fully affured, to as high a degree, or to a greater honour; and to be the friends and followers of him that excelleth, above that which is meet. As touching wealth, to provide, that those of the middle fort (as before was said) be more in number; and if any grow high, and over charged with wealth, to ule the Sochifms of a Popular State, v ? to fend him on Embaffages, and Forreign Negot ations, or imploy him in some Office that hath great charges, and little honour, &c. To which end, the Editefbip ferved in some Commonwealths.

11. To suppress the Factions, and quarrels of the Nobles, and to keep other that are verfree from joyning with them in their partakings and Faaions.

And

com

e that

hey be

t , yet

frato

th due

with-

e kind

fed in

nings,

at the

ng and

iules

fever

e and

doth

ws by

wit

rt in

bea

ower,

ow it

d as

mon-

ne de-

ceed.

pre-50

12. To increase or remit the Com mon Taxes and Contributions; according to the wealth, or want of the People and Common-walth. If the people be inc eased in Wealth, the Taxes and Subfidies may be increased. If they be poor, and their Wealth diminish, fpe cially by dearth, want of Traffick, yo to forbear Taxes and Impolitions, of to take little. Otherwife grudge and discontentments must needs follow The Soph (ms that lerve for Impolicions, are thefe, and other of like fort To pretend bufiness of great charge, a War, building of S! ips making of Ha vens, Caftles, Fortifications, Gc. fo the common defence; fometimes by Lotteries and like devises, whereit some part may be bestowed, there referved for other expences; Princely dealings needs no pretent

13. To Provide that the Difeitline Training of youth of the better fort b fuch as agreeth with that Commet wealth: As that in a Kingdom, th fons of Noble men to be attendant a the Court, that they may be accustom ed to obedience towards the Prince In the S natory State, that the fons o the Senatours be not idly, nor ove

daintily brought up, but well inft u&ed and trained up in Learning, Tongues, and waruall excercife that they may be able to bear that place in the Common-wealth, which their Father held, and centralywife, in a Popular S ale.

14. To take heed, leaft their 5:bijms, or fecret p. actifes for the continuance and ma intenance of that State, be not discovered; least by that means they refuse and disappoint themselves, but wifely ufed, and be with great for

crecie.

Com-

ccord

e Peo-

people

es and

hey be

h, fpe

k, 90

ns, of

ge and

ollow

polic

e fort

rge, a

of Ha Tr. fo

mes by herei

he re

reten

t line !

ort b 2mil

, th ant a

flom

dain

Farticular Rules.

Rules and Axisms, for Hereditary. preferving of a Kng Conquerel. dom.

Kingdoms Hereditary, are preferved at home by the ordering.

Hand moderation of the Princes rince P wer and Prerigaite. For the less ons and more temperate their Power and ove S:aie is the more firm, and fable is their

their Kingdom and Government; because they seem to be surther eff from Master like, and Tyrannical Empire; and lesse unequal in condition to the next degree, to wit, the Nobility, and so lesse subject to grudge and err

Vy. 2. Nobili y, Go. By keeping that degree and due proportion, that neither they exceed in number more than the Realm, or State can bear, as the Sionifb Kingdom, and sometime the English, when the Realm was overcharged with the number of Dukes, Earls, and other Nobles; whereby the Au harry of the Prince was celipfed, and the Realm troubled with their F4 ctions and Ambitions. Nor that any one excel in Honour, power, or wealth, as that he resemble another King with in the Kngdom, as the house of Lancafter within this Realm. To that end, not to load any with too much Honour or preferment, because it is hardeven for the best, and worthiest men, to bear their greatnesse, and high Fortune temperately, as appeareth by infinit examples in all States. The Sophisms for preventing, or reforming this inconvenience, are to be used with great caution and wildom. If any

grest

; bereat' person be to be abated, not do from al with him by calumniation or forged mpire; efert, especially if he be gratious to the mong the people, after the webiavean Pice, which besides the injustice, an occasion many times of greater g that anger towards the Prince. Not to t neithdraw their Honour all at once, more hich maketh a desperate accontent car, as ent in the party, and a commisera. etime on in the people, and so greater love, he be gracious for his virtue, and puukes , lick service. Not to banish him into by the rreign Countries, where he may have pportunity of practifing with Forreign rates , whereof great danger may ene, as in the example of (oriolanus, enry the fourth, and such like. But use these, and the like Sophisms, viz. fe of o abate their greatnesse by degrees, as avid fosts, faitinian Bells arius, &c. o advance some other men to as reat, or greater Honour, to shadow, over-mate the greatnesse of the high ther. To draw from him by degrees is friends, and followers to preferents, rewards, and other good and wfull means; especially, to be proided that the e great men be not imloyed in great or powerfull affairs of

over-

pled,

r F4-

any

ealth,

with-

that

much

it is

thieft

th by

The

ming

with

any

rest



the Common wealth, whereby they may have more opportunity to fway the State.

3. Peple, viz. So to order and be made himself, that he be loved, and re verenced of the People. For that the Prince need not greatly flar home confipinacies, or forceign Invation, theke firmly loved of his cwn people. The reason, for that the Rebel can neithe th hope for any forces for fo great enter hi prife, nor any refuge, being discovere his put to flight, if the multitude affet pa their Prince : But the common people P. being once offended, hath cause top fear every moving, both at home an wing abroad. This nay be effected by the Prince, fhe ule means and art of get ting the favour of the p.ople, and A avoid those things that breed batter in and contempt; if he feem as p and to protect them, if he maintain th of fi peace of his Kingdom; For that no thing is more popular, nor more ples fing to the people, than is peace. gi t

4. If he shew himself oftentime the graciously, yet with State and Maj he to his people, and receive complain to his suppliants, and suffice for his suppliants, and suffice for his suppliants.

like.



5. If he fit himfelf fometimes in eyms pen Cours, and place of suffice ay the hat he may feem to have a care of Inthe among his people. If he bellow many benefits and graces upon that not re Citie, which he maketh the feat of has e con full unto him, which is fit to be in the middle of his Kingdom, as the heart in the middle of the body, or the Sun in eithe the middle of Haven, both to divide

enter himself more easily into all the parts of overe his Dominions; and lea? the furthest affet parts at one end move, whilest the people Prince is in the other. If he go in ise to progress many times to see his Prowinces, especially, those that are reby the mote.

of get 6 If he grat sie his Coutiers and
Attendants in that sort, and by such

naue means, as that he may feem not to pleafure them with the hurt & injury copie of his people, as with Menopoles, and in the fuch like.

7 If he commit the handling of

ples fuch things as procure envy, or feem grievous to his Ministers, but reserve those things which are gratefull, and well pleasing to himself, as the French laim Kngs, who for that purpose, as may fue feem, have erected their Cart at Parent MIS CZ

ris, which acquitteth the Prince from grudge and envy, both with the Nobia and the reopie.

8. If he borrows fometimes fums of money of his people, though he have no need, and pay the same justly without defalcation of any part by his Ex

chequer, or other Officer.

9. If he avoid all such things as may breed be trea or entempt of his person which may be done, if he shew himself not too light, inconstant, bard, cruel, esseminate, fasfall, and satterally, as But contrariwise Religious, Grave, sus Valiane, &c. Whereby appeareth the false doctrine of the Machiavitian Policie, with far the better means to keep the people in obedience, than love, and reverence of the people towards the Prince.

with Warlike provision, which is to be rumoured, and made known abroad: if it be known, that he is reverenced, and obeyed by his peoples at

home.

in him, that his neighbour Kingdoms grow not over much in power and Dominion; which if it happen, he is to joyn speedily with other Princes, which

e from V ables

ams of have

withis Ex

s may person mfelf cruel.

7, 80 , Full h the

n Pokeep and

s the fhed

to be oad: ced, at

ieth oms Do-

s to hich are

are in like danger to abate that greatnels, and to ftrengthen himfelf and the rest aga nst it. An oversight of the Christian Princes towards the King of Spain.

12 If he get him Intelligencers by reward, or other means, to detect or h nder the defigns of that Prince, with whom he hath differences, if any thing be intended against his state. Or at least have some of his own Lydging abroad about that Princes Court, under colour of Embassage, or some other p etence; which must be men of skill and Dexierry to ferve for that

13. To observe the Laws of his Country, and not to encounter them with his Prerogative, nor toule it at all where there is a Law, for that it makeih a secret and just grudge in the peoples hearts, especially if it tender to ta'e from them ib ir comm dtes, and to bestow them upon other of his COURTIERS and Mini-Iters.

14. To provide especially, That that part, which favoureth the State asit flandeth, be more potent, than the other which favoure h it not or defireth a change.

15. To

15. To make speciall choise of good and foundmen to bear the place of Macifrates, especially of such asalfift the Prince of his Counfels, and Policies, and not to lean overmuch to his own advise, contrarie to the rule of Ma bisvil, who teacheth, that a Prince can have no good coulet, except is bein bimfelf; his reason, he use if he use the confilifieme in beasin dang riobe over mouth, and supplanted by him; and if he coun'el with more, "ben be fball be diar ded w a the differences in opiring. As if a Prince of great, or mean wisdom, could not take the Fulgement of all bis courcellours in any point of Policie, or of fo many as he him elf thinketh good, and to take it either by word or in writing; and himfelf then in private perule them all, and fo after ecot and mature deliberation, make choise of the best, without any diffraction or binding himfelf so the diredion of one. For the Proverb is true. shat two eyes fer more than one; and therefore the advises, and Confu'tations of a Schatory State, is compared by fome !o 4 Feaft,or dinner, where many contribute towards the flet, by which means they have more variety of diffies, and fo better fare: and yet every man may make choice of bit

hat difh that ferveit bem beft for bis eal hand appearie.

of good

ace of

as af

Poli-

to his

nle of

Prince

s bein

ule ib:

o to be

;and

(b24

n opi-

, or

the

any

s he

ke it

him-

and

ion,

any

e di-

rue.

ere-

ofa

104

20-

ave

1765

e of

31.0

16. The Prince himself is to fig ometimes in place of publick juflice, and 10 give an experiment of his wisdom and equity, whereby great re. verence and estimation is gotten, as in the example of selemon, which may cem the reason, why our Kings of Ending had their Kings Bench in Place of publick Justice, after the manner of the ancient Kings that fate in the Gate; where for better performing of this Princely duty, some speciall causes may be selected, which may throughly be debated and confidered upon by the Prince in Private, with the help and ad. vice of his learned Councell, and fo be decided publickly, as before is faid, by the Prince himself; At least, the Prince is to take accompt of every Minifter of publick Justice, that it may be known, that he hath a care of inflice, and doing right to his people, which makes the lufticers also to be more carefull in performing of their duties.

17. To be moderate in his Taxes, and impositions; and when need doth require to use the Subjects purse, to do it by Parliament, and with their

een-

consents, making the cause apparent unto them, and shewing his unwilling nesse in charging them Finally, so use it, that it may seem rather an offer from his Subjects, than an exaction

by him.

this end to compound the differtions that rife amongst the Nobles, with caution, that such as are free be not drawn into parts, whereby many times the Prince is endangered, and the whole Commo - we to fee in a combustion; as in the example of the Barous, which grew from a quarrel betwin the Guy of Faction, and the other Nobility.

grow secure, and negl gene of Armon, and other provision for the Commanwealth, by some rumour or sear of danger at home, to make more ready when occasion requireth. But this seldom to be used, least it be supposed a false Alarm, when there is need indeed.

20 To have speciall care, that his children, especially, the heir apparent, have such bringing up as is meet for a king, with in learning, specially of mat-

matters pertaining to State, and in Martiall exercife, contrary to the practife of many Princes, who suffer their children to be brought up in pleasure, and to spend their time in hunting, &c. which by reason of their defects, afterwards is a cause of mis-government and alteration of State.

II.

Kingdoms new gosten, or pur chased by force, are preserved by these means.

First, if they have been Subjects before to his Ancestours, or have the same tongue, manners, or fashions, as have his own Countrey, it is an easie matter to rerain such Countries within their obedience, in case the Princes bloud of the said Countrey be wholly extinct. For men of the same quativy, tongue, and condition, do easily shole, and combine themselves together, so much the rather, if the people of that Countrey have served before, and were not accustomed to their own Liberty, wherein especially is to be observed.

y, forman offer xaction

pparen

willing

with the not the bulk-Barons

etwin

f they

mour, emendanwhen ldom false in-

or a y of

ferved, that the Laws and customs of that purchased Countrey be not altered nor innovated, or at least it be done by little and little. So the Br. eurdians and dequitans were annexed to France. The reason, because part. ly they have been accusto ned to firve, and parely, for that they will of eafily agree about any other to be their Prince, of the Blond Ray Ill be once extinguished. As for the invalion of a forreign Countrey, whereento the Prince hath no right, or whereof the right heir is living: It is not the pat of a just Civil Prince, much less a Christian Prince to enforce fuch a countrey; and therefore, the Muhiavillian practifes in this cafe; to make fure work by excinguishing wholly the Eloud Royall, is lewd and impertin nt: The like is to be faid of murthering the Natives, or the greatest part of them, to the end he may hold the rest in fure possession. A thing not onely against Christian Religion, but it is inhumane injustice, cruel, and barbarous.

a. The fatest way is, (supposing a right) that some good part of the Natives be transplanted into some other place, and our Colonies, consisting of so many as shall be thought

meet.

meet, be planted there in some part of the Province, Castles, Fores, and Havens, seized upon, and more provided in sit places, as the manner was of the Babyton an Monarch, which Transplanted 10. Jews: And of the K mans in France, Tribes of the Germany, Britany, & other places. The reason:

I, For that otherwise Forces of Horse and Foot, are to be maintained within the Pootice, which cannot be done without

great charge.

me of

alte-

it be

B ...

exed

part.

agree

1 the

As

rey,

, or

It is

nce,

orce

the

to

ing

and

faid

he

di-

el.

g a

0-

ift-

ct.

 For that the whole Province is troubled and grieved with removing and supplying the Army with victuals, carriages, &c.

3. For that Colonies are more sure and faithfull, than the rest.

As for the Natives that are removed from their former feats, they have no means to hurt, and the rest of the Natives being free from the inconvenience, and fearing that themselves may be so served if they attempt any thing rashly, are content to be quiet.

The Turks practife in Alia, where the chief grounds and dwellings are possessed by the Souldiers,

whom

whom they call Timariste.

That the Prince have his feat and his refidence, in his new purchafe, especially, for a time, till things be well fetled; especially it the Provin e be great and large, as the Turks in Grecce : The reasons:

1. Because the presence of the Prince availeth much to keep things in order, and get the good will of his new Subjects

2. They conceive that they have refuge by the Princes presence, if they be oppressed by the Lieutenants, and inferiour Governours: Where it will be convenient for the winning the peoples hearts, that some example be made of punishing of fuch as have committed any violence or opp effion.

3. Because being present, be feeth and heareth what is thought & attempted; and fo may quickly give remedy to it, which being absent he cannot do, or not do

in time.

4. If the Prince himself cannot be present to reside, then, to take heed shat the charge of Governing, or new pur



and

ur-

al-

nd

e :

he

ep he

e -

11-

n-

i-

es

oe.

25

or

h

ķ

purchases be committed to such as be fure men , and of other meet quality , that depend wholly upon the Princes favour, and not to Natives, or other of their cwn Subjects, that are gracious for their Nobility, or Virtue; especially, if the Povince be great, and somewhat far d.ftant, which may foon feduce the unsetled affections of those new Subjects, As for Such Governours, as depend wholly upon the Princes fayour, being not boin, but created Noble, they will not fo eafly fuffer themselves to be won from their duty , and in case they would revolt, yet they are not able to make any great strength, for that the people obey them but as instruments and ministers, to keep them in Subjection, and not for any illwill

5. To have the children of the chief Noblemen, and of greatest Authority, Hostages with them in safe keeping, the more the better: For that no bond is stronger, than that of nature, to contain the Parents and Allies in obedience, and they the rest.

6. To alter the laws but by degrees one after another, and to make other that are more behoovefull for the establishing min!.

6. To keep the people quiet and peaceable, and well affected so much as may be, that they may seem by being conquered, to have gotten a protectour, rather than a Tyrant; For the Common-People, if they enjoy peace, and be not distracted nor drawn from their businesse, are easily contained under obedience; Yet notwithstanding, they are to be dis-used from the practice of Arms, and other Exercises which increase courage, and be weakened of Armor, that they have neither spirit, nor will to rebell.

7. If there be any faction in the Countrey, to take to him the defence of the better and stronger part, and to combine with it, as cafer in

Fr ncc.

8. To look well to the Borders, and confining Provinces, and if any rule there of great, or equal power to him. felf, to joyn league with some other Borderers, tho gh of lesse strength, to hinder the attempts (if any should be) by such neighbour Prince. For it hap peneth often, that a Countrey intested by one neighbour Prince, calleth in

crn-

and

uch

be-

pro-

For

loy

awn

ron

ned

nd-

the

rci

be

ave

the

nce

and

in

ind

ule

m.

to

p>

ed

in

n-

another, of as great, or greater power, to affift and rescue it from the other that invadeth it; So the Komans were called into Gecce, by the Etolians; the Soons, by the Britains, the Dakes, by the sakens.

9. To leave their Titles and dignities to the Natives, but the command and Authority, wholly to his

practife too often the Sophism of Po icie, especially those that appertain to a Tyrannicall State, which are soon detected by menof ludgement, and his Policy among the wiser, and better fort of his Subjects, whereof must needs follow very ill effects.

The Soph (as of Tyrants, are rather to be known, than practifed, (which are for the supporting of their Tyrannicall States,) by wife and good Princes, and are these, and such like as follow.

Rules Politick of Tyrants.

Riles practifed by Tyrans are of

1. Barbarous, and Professed, which is

proper to those that have got head, and have power fufficient of themselves, without others help, as in the Turk Jb , and Ruffe Government.

2. Sophiticall, and Diffembled; As in some States that are reputed for good and lawfull Monarchies , but inclining to Tyrann'es, proper to those which are not yet fetled, nor have power sufficient of themselves; must use the power and help of others, and fo are forced to be Politick Soph: fters.

Sophisms of a Barbarous and professed Tyranny.

TO expell and banish out of his Countrey all honest means, where. by his people may attain to learning, wildon, valour and other virtues, that they might be fer for that estate, and servile condition. For that these two, learning, and martiall exercise, effect two things most dangerous to a Tyranny: vi? Wildom, and Valour. For that men of spirit and understanding, can hardly endure a Servile State,

ead.

nem-

ern-

As

t in-

have

but

ers.

So-

his

ere.

ng,

hat

and

WO.

ca.

Ty-

2,

DIE.

Te

25

To this end, to forbid learning of liberall Arts, and Martiall exercise; As in the Ruffe Government fo Julian the Apostata dealt with the Christians. Contrariwite, to use his people to base occupations, and Mechanicall Arts, to keep them from idlenesse, and to put away from them all high thoughts, and manly conceits, and to give them a liberty of drinking drunk, and of other base and lewd conditions that they may be forted, and fo made unfit for great enterprises. So the Egyptian Kings dealt with the Hebrews; So the Rulle Emperour with his Rulle people: And Charls the fifth with the Nrtherlanders, when he purposed to enclose their priviledges, and to bring them under his absolute Governmenr.

2. To make fure to him, and his State, his Mil tary men by reward, liberty, and other means, especially. his Guard, or Pratorian Band; That being partakers of the spoil and benefit, they make like that State, And continue firm to it; as the Turk, his Janizarie; the Russe, his Boyarens, &c.

3. To unarm his people of weapons, money, and all means, whereby they may

may refift his power; And to that end, to have his fet and ordinary exactions Or. Once in two, three, or four years, and fometimes yearly, as the ra and Ruffe; who is wont to fay, That his seeple must be used as his flock of sheep, v'z. Their flecce taken from them, leaft it overlade them, and grow too beaut; That they are like to his beard, that the more it was haven the thicker it would grew. And if there be any of extraordinary wealth; to borrow of them in the mean while, till the Tax come about, or up. on some divised matter, to conficate their goods, as the common practife is of the duffe and furk.

4. To be still in Wars, to the end, his people may need a Captain; and that his Forces may be kept in practife, as the Rife doth yearly against the Tartar, Pilonian, and Swiden,

&c.

5. To cut off such as excell the rest in wealth, savour, or nobility; or be of a pregnant, or aspiring wir, and so are searfull to a Tyrant; and to suffer none to hold Office, or any Honour, but onely of him; as the Turk his Bishie; and the Russe, his Russes.

6. To forbid Guilds, Brotherhoods, Feaftings and other Assemblies among

the



the people, that they have no means or opportunity to conspire, or confer together of publick matters, or to maintain love among it themselves, which is very dangerous to a Tyrant, the Russes practise.

7. To have their Beagles, or I stener in every corner, & parts of the Realm; especially, in places that are more suspect, to learn what every man saith, or thinketh; that they may prevent all attempts, and take away such as missike

their State.

end,

ears,

VZ.

Thu

ore it

grew.

inary

mean r up-

Cate

ife is

end,

pra-

ainft

den ,

reft

or be

ad fo

uffer but

101 ;

ods,

ong

the

8. To make Schism, and Division among his Subjects, v.z. To set one Noble man against another, that through Fact on & disagreement among themselves they may be weakened, and attempt nothing against him, and by this means entertaining whisperings, and complaints, he may know the secrets of both parts, and have matter against them both, when need requireth. So the Russemade the Faction of the Zemsky, and the Oppressions.

9. To have ftrangers for his Guard, and to entertain Par fit. s, and other base and service fellows, not too wise, and yet subtile, that will be ready for reward to do and execute what he

com-

commandeth, though never so wicked and unjust. For that good men can not flatter, and wise men cannot serve

a Tyrant.

All these practises and such like, may be contracted into one or two, viz. To bereave his subjects of will and power to do him hurt, or to alter the present State The use is Caution, not Imitation.

II.

Soph sms of the Sophisticall, or subtile Tyrans, to hold up his State.

I. To make shew of a good Kirg,by observing a temper and mediocity in his Government, and whole course of life; To which end, it is necessary, That this subtile Tyrant, be a cunning Politic an, or a Machiavilian at the least, and that he be taken so to be, for that it maketh him more to be steared and regarded, and is thought thereby: not unworthy for to Govern others.

2. To make thew not of feverity, but of gravity, by feeming reverent,

and

47

and not terrible in his speech, and gesture, and habit, and other demeandour.

3. To pretend care of the Common-wealth; And to that end, to feem loath to exact Tributes, and other charges; and yet to make nec. flity of it, where none is: To that end to procure fuch War as can bring no danger toward his State, and that might eafily be compounded, or fome other chargeable bufiness; and to continue it on , that he may continue his exaction and contribution fo long as he lift. And thereof to imp oy some in his publick fervice, the reft to hourd up in his Treasury, which is sometimes practifed even by lawfull Princes, as Edward the fourth in his Wars against France, when have levied a great fum of money throughout his Realm, especially of the Londoners, he went over Scas, and returned without anything doing.

4. Sometimes to give an account by open speech, and publick writing, of the expence of such Taxes and impositions, as he hath received of his subjects, hat he may seem to be a good husband and frugal, and not a sobbe

of the Common-wealth.

5. To

ked an rve

or do

not

,by

ole ne-

to be ght

ity,

5. To that end, to be flow fome cost upon publick buildings, or fome other work for the Common good, especially upon the Ports, Forts, and chief Cities of his Realm, that so he may seem a benefactour, & have a delight in the adorning of his Country, or doing some good for it.

6 To forbid feastings, and other meetings, which increase love, and give opportunity to conter together of publick matters, under pretence of sparing cost for better uses, To that end the Curficu Bell was first ordained by william the Conquerour, to give men warning to repair home at a cer-

Í

t

ŧ

Ь

n

t

b

C

tain hour.

7. To take heed that no one grow to be over-great, but rather, many equally great, that they may envy, and contend one with another; and it he refolve to weaken any of this fort, to do it warily and by degrees; If quite to wreck him, and to have his life, yet to give him a lawfull trya!, after the manner of his Country; And if he proceed fo far with any of great power and estimation, as to do him contumely, or differace, not to suffer him to escape, because contumely and differace, are things contrarie unto Homout.



cof

other

c'al-

Ci-

feem.

n the

oing

her

and

er of

e of

that

lain-

gve

Cct-

WOTE

nany

and

if he

wite

life,

frer

d if

rest

him

and

Ho-

our,

uour , which great sp'rits do most defire, and fo are moved rather to a revenge for their difgrace, than to any thankfulnefle, or acknowledging the Princes favour for their pardon or difmission : True in Athein; but not in true Christian Wobility.

8. To unarm his people, and flore up their weapons, under pretence of keeping them fafe, and having them ready when fervice requireth. and then to arm with them fuch, and to many as he shall think meet, and to commit them to fuch as are fure men.

9. To make schism or division un. der hand among his Nobility, and betwixt the Nobility and the people, and to fer one Rich man against another, that they combine not together, and that himself by hearing the griefs and complaints, may know the fecrets of both parts, and fo have matter against them both, when it lifteth him to call them to an account.

to To offer no man any contumely or wrong, specially, about womens matters, by attempting the chaftity of their Wives or Daughters, which hath been the ruin of many Tyrants, and conversion of their States, As of Tar-

quinius

quinius, by Brutus, Appius, by Virginius, Pshistratus, by Harmodius, Alexander Medices, Duke of Florence, Albifus of Placentia, Rodericus, King of

Spair, &c.

in his pleasures, or to use them closely that he be not seen; For that men sober, or watchfull, or such as seem so, are not lightly subject to contempt, or conspiracies of their own.

12. To reward such as atchieve some great or commendable enterprize; or do any speciall action for the Common-wealth, in that manner as it may seem, they could not be better regarded, in case they lived in a

Free-State.

13. All rewards and things gratefull, to come from himself, but all punishments, exactions, and things ungratefull, to come from his Officers, and publick Ministers; And when he hash effected what he would by them, if he see his people discontented withall, to make them a Sacrifice to pacific his Subjects.

14. To pretend great care of Religion, and of ferving God, (which hath been the manner of the wickedet



2

1

t

0

t

2

h

8

1

b

c

1

t

ſ

0

t

B

W

w

Tyrants) for that people do less fear any hurt from those, whom they do think Virtuous and Religious, nor attempt likely to do them hurt, for that they think that God protects them.

15. To have a firong and fure Guard of forreign Souldiers, and to bind them by good turns, that they having at least profit, may depend upon him and the present State; As Caligula, the German Guard, where the Nobility are many and mighty. The like is practifed by Lawfull Kings, as by the French King.

16. To procure that other great persons be in the same fault, or case with them, that for that cause they be forced to defend the TYRANT, for their own fafe-

tre-

Alex

Aloi-

g a

erate

close-

men

h 25 & to

cheir

nieve

nterfor

nan-

nt be ins

ate. pu-

and ath

if he

his

ali-

ath

d [y-

17. To take patt, and to joyn himfelt with the ftronger part; if the Common people, and mean degree be the stronger, to joyn with them; if the Rich and Noble, to joyn with them, For fo that part with his own firengh, will be ever able to overmatch the other.

18. So to frame his manners and whole behaviour, as that he may fee m,

Sir Walter Raleigh's

if not perfectly good, yet rolerably evil, or fomewhat good, fomewhat bad.

These Rules of Hypocriticall Tyrants are to be known, that they may be avoided, and met withall, and not drawn into imitation.

Preservation of an Ari-

Rules to preferve a Senatory State, are partly taken from the common Axioms, and partly from those that preferve a Kingdom.

Preservation of an Sophisms. Oligarchie, by Rules.

about publick affairs, to order the matter, that all may have liberty to frequent their Common Affamblies, and Councels; But to impose a Fine upon the richer fort, if they omit that duty. On the other fide, to pardon the people, if they abfant themselves, and to bear with them up

1

(



der pretence, that they may the better intend their Occupations, and not be hindered in their trades, and earn-

ings.

2. In election of Magistrates, and Officers: To suffer the poorer fort to vow, and abjure the bearing of Office, under colour of sparing them, or to enjoyn some great charge, as incident to the Office, which the poor cannot bear. But to impose some great Fine upon those that be rich, if they refuse to bear Office, being Elect unto it.

3. In judiciall matters: In like manner to order, that the people may be absent from publick Trials, under pretence of following their businesse. But the Richer to be present, and to compel them by Fines, to frequent the

Court.

4. In Warlike exercise and Arms: That the poor be not forced to have Armor, Horse, &c. under pretence of sparing their cost, nor to be drawn from their trades by Martiall exercises; but to compel the Richer sort to keep their proportion of Armor, Horse, by excessive Fines, and to exercise themselves in War-like matters,

To

State;

erably

ewhat

l Ty-

d met

to imi-

ilms.

mblies er the iberty Affens

they de, so abjent m un5. To have special care of instrucing their children in liberal Arts, Policy, and warlike exercise, and to observe good order and discipline. For as Popular States are preserved by the frequency, and Liberty of the people, so this Government of the Richer, is preserved by discipline, and good order of Governours.

6. To provide good store of warlike furniture, especially of Horse & Horse me:, and of Armed men, viz. Pike, &c which are proper to the Gentry, as show, and light furniture are for a Popular

Company.

7. To put in practife some points of a Popular State; viz. To lade no one man with too much preferment; To make yearly or half years Magistrates, &. For that the people are pleased with such things, and they are better secured by this means from the rule of one. And if any grow to too much greatness, to abate him by the Sophisms ht for this State.

8. To comit the Offices and Magistracies, to those that are best able to bear the greatest charges for publick matters, which both tendeth to the conservation of this State, and pleaseth the people, for that they reap some



relief, and benefit by it.

9. To the fame end , To contract marriages among themselves; the rich

with the rich, 6

trud-

Poli-

ob.

or as

the

ople,

er, is

order

arlike

orfe-

, &c.

fhot,

pular

ts of

one

To

ares,

afed

tter

e of

uch

ms

1/2to ick the eth me C.

10. In fome things which concern not the Points, and matters of State, as Eeding Magistrates, Making Laws, c. to give an equality, or sometimes a preferment to the Common People, and not to do, as in some Oligarchies they were wont ; viz. To swear against the People, to suppresse and bridle them; but rather contrary, To minifter an Oath at their admission, That they shall do no wrong to any of the People; and if any of the richer offer wrong to any of the Commens, to shew some example of severe punishment.

For other Axioms that preferve this State, they are to be borrowed from those other rules that tend to the preserving of a Popular , and Tyrannicall State; for the strict kind of Oligarchie

is kin to a Tyranny.

Preservation of Sophisms.
a popular State; Rules or Axioms.

I. IN publick Assemblies and Confultations about matters of State, creating of Magistrates, publick Institute, & Exercise of Arms, to practise the contrary to the former kind of Government, to wit, an Oligarchie. For in Popular States, the Commons and meaner fort are to be drawn to those Assemblies, Magstrates, Offices, Warlike Exercise, and the richer fort are to be spared, and not to be forced by sine, or otherwise, to frequent these Exercises.

2. To make thew of honouring and reverencing the richer men, and not to fwear against them, as the manner hath been in some Popular State; but raveler to prefer them in all other matters, that concern not the State and publick Government.

3. To elect Magistrates from among the Commons by Lot, or Ballating, and not to choose any for their wealths sake.

4. To take heed, that no man bear office tw ce, except it be Military, where the pay, & falary, . is to be referved in their their own hands, to be disposed of by a Common Councel, &c. And to fee that no man be too highly preferred.

5. That no Magistracy be perpetual, but as short as may be, to wit, for

a year, half a year, &c.

on-

ate.

blick

dife

Go.

For

and

hole

Var-

Te

o be

xer-

and

t 10

ath

at-

ng

of-

re

in

eir

6. To compel Magistrates, when their time expireth, to give an accompt of their behaviour and government, and that publickly before the Commons

7. To have publick Salaries and allowance of their Magistrates, Judges, oc. And yearly dividents for the common people, and fuch as have most

need among them.

8. To make Judges of all matters out of all forts, fo they have fome apt-

ness to perform that duty.

9. To provide that publick Iudgements and Trials be not frequent; and to that end to inflict great Fines and other punishments upon Pettifoggers and Dilators, as the law of requital, or. Because for the most part the richer and nobler, and not the Commons are indited and accused in this Commonwealth, which causeth the rich to conspire against the State; whereby many times the popular State is rurned into an Oligarcite, or some other Government

ment. Hereto tendeth that Art of Civil Law, made against / ccusers and Calumniatours: Ad Senatus-confultum Turpilianum, 1. 1. de Calumniatoribus.

10. In such free States as are popular, and have no revenue, to provide that publick Assemblies be not after; because they want salary for Pleaders and Oratours; And if they be rich; yet to be wary, that all the revenue be not divided amongst the Commons. For, that this distribution of the Common revenue among the multitude, is like a purse or barrel without a bottom. But to provide, that a sufficient part of the revenue be stored up for the publick affairs.

TI. If the number of the poor energie too much in this kind of State, to fend some abroad out of the Cities into the next Countrey places, and to provide above all, that none do live idely, but be fet to their trades. To this end, to provide that the richer men place in their Farms and Coppie holds, such decayed Citizens

for this State, and not to suppose that to be fit for a popular State, that seemeth most popular; but that which is be for the continuance thereof: And

d

m s.

1-

le

rs

et

'n

2

it

e

k

-

:3

0

,

đ

t

to that end, not to lay into the Exchequer or Common Treasury, such goods as are conficate, but to store them up as holy and confectate things, which except it be practifed, confications, & fines of the Common people would be frequent, and so this State would decay by weakening the people.

Conversion of States in ge-

Onverfion of a State, is the declining of the Common wealth cither to some other form of Government, or to his full and last period appointed by God.

Causes of conversions of States are of two sorts: General and Particular.

2. Wante

2. Want of wildom and good Councel to keep the State, the Prince, Nobles, and people in good temper, and due proportion, according to their fe-

veral order and degrees.

3. Want of Iustice either in administration (as ill Laws, or ill Magiastrates) or in the execution, as rewards not given where they should be, or there bestowed where they should not be, or punishments not inflicted where they should be

4. Want of power and sufficiency to maintain and defend it self, viz. Of provision, as Armor, Money, Captains, Souldiers, &c. Execution, when the means or provision is not used, or all

used.

7. Parti ula: To be noted and collected out of the contraries of those rules, that are prescribed for the preservation of the Common-wealth.

Particular causes of Conversion of States, are of two sorts.

Foreign: By the over greatness of invasion of some forreign kingdom or other State of meaner power,

n-0-

nd

.

ds

or

ot re

y

s, ie

-

lower, having a part within our own, which are to be prevented by the providence of the chief, and rules of policy for the preserving of every State: This falleth out very feldom for the great difficulty to overthrow a forreign State.

(Sedition or open violence by the fironger part. Muk. Alteration without violence.

Sedition.

(Edition is a power of inferiours oppoling it felf with force of Armes against the superiour power, Quasi ditto lecedens.

Causes of Sedition are of two forts.

Libern (W Hen they, that are of equal qualitie in a Commonwealth, or do take themselves fo to be, are not regarded equally in all, or in any of these three. or, when they are

1, Gineral Riches. 5 fe Sir walter Raleigh's

fo unequal in quality, or take themfelves fo to be are regarded but equally, or with less respect than those that be of less defect in these three things, or in anyof them.

1

Honour.

In the Chief: Couetoulnels or oppression, by the Magistrate or higher Power, (viz.) when the Magistrates, especially the Chief, encreased his substance & revenue beyond measure, either with the publick or (private calamitie, whereby the Governours grow to quarrel among themselves as in Olygarchies) or the other degrees conspire together, and make quarrel against the Chief, as in Kingdoms: The examples of at Tylr Jack Stram, &c.

2 In the (huf: Injury, when great Spirits, and of great power, are greatly wronged & diffionoured, or take themfelves to to be, as Correlanus, Cyrus miner, Earl of warnick. In which cases the best way is to decide the wrong.

3. Preferment, or want of preferment; wherein some have over-much,

ind

and so wax proud and aspire higher for have more or lesse, then they deserve, as they suppose, and so in envy and disdain, seek Innovation by open faction, so casar, &c.

4. Some great necessity or calamity; So Xerxes after the foil of his great Army. And Senacherib after the losse of

185. in one night.

qua.

them-

e are

ar e.

h les

thole

de-

three

nyof

or-

or

agi-

feth

nea-

vate

urs

5 25

ces

he

kc.

at

ly

n-

i-

es

.

T. End, when the chief Exceed the mediocrity before mentioned, and so provoketh the Nobility, and other degrees, to conspire against him; as Bruius Cashin, Gr. against Cefar.

2. Feer, 117. Of danger when one or more dispatch the Prince by secret practice or forces to prevent his own danger, as Ariabanus did

Xerxes.

Particus,

2. Lust or Lechery as Tarquinius Superbus, by Brutus; Pisstractuda, by Armodius; appius by Virginiu.

Chief.

4. Consempt, For vile quality & base behaviour, as Sardanapalus by Artaces, Dionifius the younger by Dien.

Usber de-

great diffrace is done to tome of great Spirit, who standeth upon his honour and reputation, as Caligula by Chaceas.

Other de-

6. Hose of Advancemen, or some great profit, as Mithie ates, Ansharjanes

Alteration without violence.

Chuses of alteration without vioc lence are; I. Excess of the State; when by degrees the State growth from that temper and mediocrity wherein it was, or should have been setled, and exceedeth in power, riches, and absoluteness in his kind, by the ambition & covetousness of the chiefe immoderate taxes, and impositions, &c. applying all to his own benefit, without respect of other degrees & so in the end changeth it self into another State or form of Government, as a Kingdom into a Tyrannie, an Olyanch into an Aristocras.

2. Exeff, of some one or more in the Common-wealth; viz. When some one or more in a Common wealth





fom:

ie to

who

nour

igula

ment,

MI-

vios

veth

crity

hes,

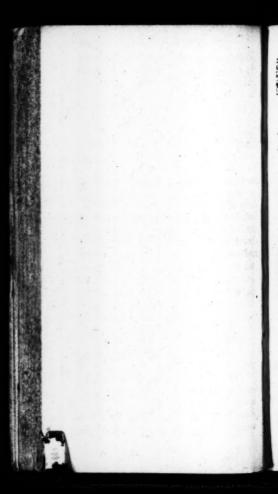
the icie

her as a chy in mc

grow to an excellency or excelle above the reft, either in honour, wealth, or virtue; and fo by permiffion and popular favour, are advanced to the Soveregaty: By which means, popular States grow into Oligarchies; and Oligarchies and Ariftocracies into Monarchies. For which cause the Athenians and some other free States, made their Laws of Offrocifmes, to banish any for a time that should excell, though it were in virtue, to prevent the alteration of their State; Which because it is an unjust Law, 'tis better to take heed as the beginning to prevent the means, that none should grow to that heigh and excellency, than to use so sharp and unjust a remedy.

FINIS.

A de



A

METHOD,

How to make use of the Book before, in the reading of the Storie.



A V I D being seventy years of age, was of wisdome, Memory, &c. sufficient to govern his Kingdom; 1. Reg. Cap. 1.

Old age is not ever unfit for publick Government.

DAVID being of great years, and lo baving a cold, dry, and imporent body, married with Abishag, a fair maid, of the best complexion through the whole Realm, to revive his body and prolong bis life, 1. Reg. Chap. 1, vers. 3.

Example of the like practife in Charles the Fifth.

Avid being old and impotent of bo. Die, by the advise of his Nobles and Phificians, married a young maid called Abishag, to warm and preferre bls o'd bodie.

Observation.

7 He ber David did well in marrying a maid? and whether it be lawfull for an old decayed and impotent man, to marrie a young woman; of on the other fide, for an old, worn, and decrepite moman, to marrie a joung and luftie man.

For the Affirmative.

RG. The end of marriage is So-A ciety and mutual comfort; but there may be Societie and mutual comfort in a marriage betwixt an old, and young partie : Ergo 'tis Lawful.

Anfw. Societie and comfort is a caufe & effect of marriage; but none of the principal ends of marriage: which are:
1. Procreation of children, and fothe

2. The avoiding of Fornication.

As for comfort and societie they may be betwirt man and man, woman and woman, where no marriage is, and therefore no proper ends of marriage.

The Negative,

A R G. 1. That conjunction, which hash no respect to the right and proper ends, for which marriage was ordained by God, is no lawfull marriage. But the conjunction betwitt an old impotent, and young partic hath no respect to the right end, for which marriage was ordained by God. Therefore it is no lawful marriage.

2. No contract, wherein the partie contracting, hinder himself to an impossible condition, or to do that which he cannot do, is good or lawfull. But the contract of marriage by an impotent perfor with a young partie, hinder him to an impossible condition to do that which he cannot do, viz. to perform the ducies of Marriage; Therefore it is unlawfull,



ife

boand Eled o d

poind

Sobut fort

ci-

For the same cause, the civil Law determineth a nullity in these marriages, except the woman know before the instruite of the man, in which case she can have no wrong, being a thing done with her awn knowledge and conjent, because Volenti non sit injuria:

In legem Iulian, de adulteriis leg. Si Uxor,

It provides hursh, r, for the more certainty of the infirmatic, That three years be expired before the diffolution of the marriage, because that men that have been infirm at the first, by reason of sick-nesses, or some other accept nr, asterwards proved to be sufficient: De repudiis leg.

in caufis,

Defence for David, in marrying abiflag.

I was restor a Medicine, than a marriage, without any evil, or disordered affection.

2. It was by the persuafion of his No-

bles, and Phyfitians.

3. It was for the publick good, to pro-

long the life of a worthy Prince.

4. It was with the knowledge and confent of the young maid, who was made

405

acquinited with the Kings infirmity, and to what end she was married unto him; who if she do it for the common good, and for duties sake, having withall the gift of continency, she is to be commended; if for ambition, or some vain respect, it is her own, and not Davids fault.

es,

fir-

can

ruse

em or

er-

ave ck-

rds eg.

11-

47-

red

lo-

re-

nd

103

Politicall Nobilitie.

Adonijah aspiring to the Kingdom.

First, took the advantage of Davids affection and kininesse sowards bim, and make him secure of any ill dealing.

Secondly, of his age and infirmities, disabling his Father as unfit for Government.

Thirdly, blazed bis title, and Right to

Fourthly, got him Charists, Har f-men, and Foot men, and a guard to make them of State.

Fifthly, being a comly, and goodly Perfor, made a popular shew of himself, and his qualities. Sint-



Sixtly, joyned to himself in Vatting Joah, the Generall of the Army, who was an displeasure for murthering of Abner, and Amaza, and feared that David would supply Benajah in bis place, and fo was difcontented. And Abiather the high Prieft, that was likewife ducontented with David, for the preferment of Zadok.

. Seventhly, bad meetings with them, and other his confederates under pretente of a vow, and offering at the Fountains Raguel, in the confines of Judea.

Ligibly, made a shew of Religion by

Sicrificing, &c.

Winthly, made bimfelf familiar with the Nobles and people, and entertained

them with feasting.

Tenthly, drew into his part the chief Officers of the Lours, and Servants to the King, by rewards, Familiarity, &c.

b

27

w

104

ot

Di

ei

Elevenibly, difgraced and abafed the Competitour, and fuch as be knew would take part with h.m, and consealeth his ambitton, and purpofe from them.

Twelfebly bad Ionathan a Favourite of the court, and near about the King " give him intelligence, if any thing wert discovered, and moved at the court,



whileft himfelf was in hand about his practife.

Action

00 WAS

David

ather

ent of

bem, etence ain of

on by

with

Atreck

chief

ts to

rity ,

d the

kmem

con-

from.

urile 18 11

wert

uri .

OBS ERVATIONS.

Ways of fuch as aspire to the Kingdom, and marks to discern them.

First, they wind into the Princes favoor by service, officionsnesse, flaterie, &c. to plant bim in a good or infon of their loyaltie and faithfulnesse, thereby to make him secure of their practises.

2. They take advantage of the Princes infirmities, age, impotencie, negligence, fex, &c. And mork upon that by diffilling the Prince, and fecret detracting of his State, and Government.

3. They blaze their Title, and claim to the Grown, (if they have any with their

friends and favourites.

4. They provide them in sever of extraordinarie forces, and furniture for the wars, make much of good Souldiers, and have a pretince (if it be espied) of some other end, as for the Kings bonour, or service, and to be in readinesse against force enemies, &c.

5. They

5. They make epenshim of their best quilities, and combinesse of their persons (which though it be vain as a dum) show, it is very effectual to win the liking of the popular fort, which according to the rule of the election of Kings, in the Bees Common wealth; think that Forma est digna imperare) Activitie, Noblesie, Ancestrie, &c.

6. To have their blazers abroad II fee out their virtues, and to prepare their

friends in every Province.

7. To draw into their part, and make fure unto them of the chief Peers, and men of best quality, such as are mightish and most gracious with the fouldiers, and the Militaric men, and most subtile and politick, especially such as be ambitious and discontent with the State.

8. To bave meetings for conferent under some pretence of some ordinari matter in some convenient place, not to near, nor too far off but where friend may belt resort and assemble unto this

without fufpition.

9. To take up a shew, and pretenced Religion more than before, and beyond the

practife of their former life.

na great prion is very effectuall) feaing, liberality, gaming, &c.

11. 1

1

by gifts, familiaritie, &c. the chief Officers of the Court, and Governours of State.

12. To have fome near about the Prince, to keep them in credit, and common sufer-

tior, if any arife.

13. To diffrace fact as they know to be fure and frishfull to the Prince, expresent State, or to the competition, and to bring them into contempt by flander, detraction, and all means they can, and to conseal the defigns from them, lest they be discovered before they be too ripe.

I4. To have some spie near about the Prince, to advertise them if any inching suspition arise, whilest themselves are 114

Stifing.

Note the practifes of Absolom, 2 Sam. 16. And of Cyrus minor in Xenophon; (199) arabapnos, cap. 1.

Politicall Prince.

David being a most worthy and excellent Prince for wisdom, valour, religion, E. 2 and

.

font umi e liding

beft

For-

their

and gbeieft and le and bition

ference linarie not to friende s then

ence of

(which (t) feat-

and justice, and so highly deferving of the Com. mon-wealth, yet grown into age, grew withall into contempt, & had many both of his Nobles,& common people, that fell from him first with Abfe lom, then with Adontial, who affected the Kingdom, and rebelled against him: For remedie where. of, he Rirred up himfelf to publick actions, which might thew his vigour & fufficiencie to manage the affairs of his Kingdom.

1. A Feer the victorie against Abb Mom, he forced himself to forther mourning, and shewed himself to his dicontented Arm, when all were like to fall from him, for his unreasonable sorth ard lamentation for his Son. hly

om.

OWn

in-

ma-

5,&

fell

66

146

ing-

tinft

ere.

felf

nich

ar &

the

n.

ke

erre

2. After the victorie, be caufed a general convention to be affembled of ibe whole Nation, to bring bin bome with honour to Jerusalem, which was a ren wing, and re-establishing of bim. 2 Sam, 19, 12.

3. He gave an experiment of bis power and authoritie, by deposing a person of great authoritie and effimation, to wit loab, General Cantain of the Armie, and

advancing Amala to his place.

4. He fent kind me flages to Lerufalem, and to other chief and bead sawns, and (pecial men of Ludea, bis contributes pating them of their alliance with him with thele words That they were of his own flesh and bloud, with presestation of bis special long and affection towards them, ti grovide them with the like kindn fs. all affe lion towards bm.

5. He elembled a Parliament of his while Realm, and took occasion upon the designing of his fuccessour, to comment unio them the fucceffion of his boufe, int the can inuance and ma numance of Gads t'us wor hip and rel gion then establishet, and gave a grave and publick charge to his Successive new lefigned, touching the manner of his governmen', and maintaining of religion, 1. Chron. 12. 13.

6. He frewed his bountie and magnifi-

8 Sir Walter Raleigh's Maxims. cence in congessing matter for building of the Temple, as gold, silver, brasse, &c. And caused it to be published and made knows to the Parliament and whole Nation, I. Chron. 22, 13.

7. He revived the (burch Government, and fer it in a right order, affiguing to every Church Officer his place and

function.

8. He suppressed the faction of Adonijah, and ordained Solomon his Successor, I Kingsl. II. By these means he retained his Majestic and Authority in his old age, as appeareth by the effect; for that hing hed rid, he suppressed the faction of Adonijah, (which was grown mighty, and was set on soon with his have commandment, and signification of his pleasure, and so be died in peace.

FINIS.

SIR
WALTER RALEIGH'S
INSTRUCTIONS
to his
SONNE:
and to Posteritie.

ing (

tion ,

gring

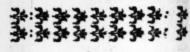
doniessor,

014

that ion of r, and and Corrected, & enlarged according to the Authours own Copie.



Printed for W. Shears Junio; and are to be fold at the Bible in Covent-Garder, 1656.



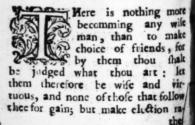
SIR

Walter Raleigh,

To His Son.

CHAP. I.

Virtuous persons to be made choice of for friends.



c

the of thy betters, than thy Inferiours, thunning always fuch as are poore and needy : for if thou givett twenty gifts, and tefufe to do the like but once, all that thou haft done will be loft, and fuch men will becom thy mortal enemies : Take also especial care, that thou never truft any friend or fervant, with any matter that may endanget thine effate; for fo shalt thou make thy felf a bond-flave to him that thou truffeft, and leave thy felf always to his mercy: And be fure of this, thou shale never find a friend in thy young years, whose conditions and qualities will please thee after thou comest to more discretion and judgement, and then all thou givest is loft, and all wherein thou shalt trust fuch a one, will be discovered. Such therefore as are thy interiours, will follow thee but to eate thee out, and when thou leavest to feed them, they wil hate thee; and such kind of men, if thou preferve thy estate, will always be had : And if thy friends be of better quality than thy felt, thou may it be fure of two things: the fieft, That they will be more carefull to keep thy counsel , because they have more to lose then thou haft : the econd, They will effects thee

thee for thy feif, and not for this which thou doeft posieffe; but if then be subject to any great vanity or ill (from which I hope God will bleffe thee) then therein trust no man; for every mans folly ought to be his greateft sccret And although I perswade thee to affociate thy felf with thy bete ters, or at least with thy Peers, yet remember always that thou venter not thy estate with any of those great ones, that shall attempt unlawfull things, for fuch men labour for themselves, and not for thee; thou shalt be fuie to part with them in the danger , but not in the honour; and to venture a fure estate in present, in hope of a better in furure, is meer madnette : And great men forget fuch as have done them fervice, when they have obtained what they would, and will rather hate thee for faying thou haft been a mean of their advancement, than acknow. ledge it.

I could give thee a thousand examples, and I my self know ir, and have tasted it in all the course of my life; when thou shalt read and observe the Stories of all Nations, thou shalt find innumerable examples of the like a Let thy love the effore be to the best,

fo long as they do well; but take heed that thou love God, thy Countrey, thy Prince, and thine own estate, before all others: for the fancies of men change, and he that loves to day, hateth to morrow; but let reason be thy School-miftreffe, which shall ever guide thee aright.

for

at-de

10

cot 3,

0

e

CHAP. II.

Great care to be had in the choofing of a Wife.

THe next and greatest care ought to be in the choice of a Wife, and the onely danger therein, is beauty, by which all men in all ages , wife and foolish, have been berrayed. And though I know it vain to ute reations or arguments, to diffwade thee from being captivated therewith , there being few or none, that ever refifted that Witchery; yet I cannot omit to warm thee, as of other things, which may be thy ruin and destruction. For the present time, it is true, that every man prefers his fantafie in that appetite, beore all other worldly defires, leaving

the

thee for thy fe'f, and not for that which thou doeft posieffe; bat if thou be subject to any great vanity or ill (from which I hope God will bleffe thee) then therein trust no man; for every mans folly ought to be his greateft fecret And although I perswade thee to affociate thy felf with thy bete ters, or at least with thy Peers, yet remember always that thou venter not thy estate with any of those great ones, that shall attempt unlawfull things, for fuch men labour for themselves, and not for thee; thou shalt be fure to part with them in the danger , but not in the honour; and to venture a fure effate in present, in hope of a better in future, is meer madneffe : And great men forget fuch as have done them fervice, when they have obtained what they would, and will rather hate thee for faying thou haft been a mean of their advancement, than acknowledge it.

I could give three a thousand examples, and I my self know it, and have tasted it in all the course of my life; when thou shalt read and observe the Stories of all Nations, thou shalt find innumerable examples of the like? Let thy love the efore be to the best,

fo long as they do well; but take heed that thou love God, thy Countrey, thy Prince, and thine own effate, before all others: for the fancies of men change, and he that loves to day, hateth to morrow; but let reason be thy School-miftreffe, which thall ever guide thee aright.

the

at-de

10

e-ot s,

0

CHAP. II.

Great care to be had in the choofing of a Wife.

THe next and greatest care ought to be in the choice of a Wife, and the onely danger therein, is beauty, by which all men in all ages, wife and foolish, have been berrayed. And though I know it vain to ute reafons or arguments, to diffwade thee from being captivated therewith , there being few or none, that ever relifted that Witchery; yet I cannot omit to warn thee, as of other things, which may be thy ruin and destruction. For the present time, it is true, that every man prefers his fantafie in that appetite; beore all other worldly defires, leaving the

the care of honour, credit, and fafery in respect thereof; But remember, that though these afficaions do not laft, yet the bond of Marriage dureth to the end of thy life; and therefore better to be borne withall in a Mistress, than in a Wife, for when thy humour shall change, thou art yet free to chuse again (if thou give thy felf that vain liberty.) Remember secondly, that if thou marry for Beauty, thou bindeft thy felf for all thy life for that, which perchance will neither last nor please thee one year; and when thou hast it, it will be to thee of no price at all, for the degree dirth when it is arrained, & the affection perifheth, when it is fatisfied. Remember, when thou wert a fucking Child, that then thou didft love thy Nurse, and that thou wert fond of her, after a while thou didft love thy Drienurse, and didft forget the other, after that thou didft also despise her; so will it be with thee in thy liking in elder years; and therefore, though thou eanst not forbear to love, yet forbear to link, and after a while thou shale find an alteration in thy felf,& fee another far more pleasing than the first, fecond, or third Love : yet I wish thee above all the reft, have a care thou

1

aot

eth

fs.

ur

ife

in

at

ch

G

it

ne

ic i.

g

y

t, trill tare

doft not marry an uncomely Woman for any respect; for comelineste in Children is riches, if nothing elfe be left them. And if thou have care for thy races of horfes, and other beafts, value the shape and comelinesse of thy Children, before alliances or riches : have care therefore of both together for if tho, have a fair Wife, and a poor one, if thine own eftate be not great, affure thy felf that Love abideth not with want; for the is thy companion of plenty and honour, for I never yet knew a poor Woman exceeding fair, that was not made dishonest by one or other in the end. This Buththe taught her Son S lumin; Favour is dereitfull, and Be tity is van tie; the faith further, That a we fe woman ove feeth the ways of her Houshold, and caseth not the bread of aleneffe

Have therefore ever more care, that thou be beloved of thy wife, rather than thy felf befotted on her; and thou shalt judge of her love by these two observations: first, if thou perceive she have case of thy estate, and exercise her felf therein; the other, if she study to please thee, and be sweet unto thee in conversation, without thy instruction, for Love needs no teach

ing, nor precept. On the other fide, be not fower or thern to thy wife, for cruelty engendereth no other thing than hatred: Let her have equall part of thy Estate whilest thou livest, it thou find her sparing and honest; but what thou givest after thy death, remember that thou givest it to a stranger, and most times to an enemy, for he that shall marry thy wife, will despise thee, thy memory, and thine, and shall possette the quiet of thy labours, the truit which thou haft planted, enjoy thy love, and fp.nd with joy and eafe what thou hast spared, and gotten with care and travel : Yet always remember that thou leave not thy w.fe to be a shame unto thee after thou art dead, but that the may live according to thy estate; especially, if thou haft few Children, and them provided for. But howfoever it be, or whatfoever thou find, leave thy wife no more than of necessary thou must, but onely during her widowhood; for if the love again, let her not enjoy her fecond love in the fame bed wherein the loved thee, nor fl.eto future pleasures with those feathers which death hath pulled from thy wings; but leave thy cftate to thy house and children, in which thou livest up-

on earth whilest it lasteth. To conclude, Wives were ordained to continue the generation of men, not to transferre them, and diminish them. either in continuance or ability; and therefore thy house and estate, which liueth in thy ion, and not in thy wife . is to be preferred. Let thy time of marriage be in thy young and firong years; for believe it, ever the young wife betrayeth the old husband, and the that had thee not in thy flower, will despise thee in thy fall, and thou shalt be unto her but a captivity and forrow. Thy best time will be towards thirty, for as the younger times are unfit, either to chule or to govern a wife and family; fo if thou flay long, thou shalt hardly see the education of thy Children, which being lett to strangers, are in effect loft, and better were it to be unborn, than ill bred; for thereby thy posterity shall either perish, or remain a shame to thy name and family. Furthermore, if it be late ere thou take a wife, thou shalt spend the prime and fummer of thy life with Harlots, deftroy thy health, impoverish thy estate, and endanger thy life; and be fure of this, that how many Mistresses soever thou haft, so many enemies thou shalz

purchase to thy felf; for there never was any fuch affection, which ended not in hatred or disdain, Remember the faying of S tomon, There is a way which feemerbright to a man, but the iffues there. of are the wages of death; for howfoever a lewd woman please thee for a time, thou wilt hate her in the end, and the will fludy to deftroy thee, If thou canft not abitain from them in thy vain and unbridled times, yet remember that thou fowe, ton the fands, & doft mingle the vital bloud with corruption, and purchasest diseases, repentance, and ha tred onely. Bestow therefore thy youth fo, that thou mayeft have comfort to remember it, when it hath forfaken thee, and not figh and grieve at the account thereof; whilest thou art young thou will think it will never have an end; but behold, the longest day hath his evening, and that thou shalt enjoy it but once, that it never turns again, use it therefore as the Spring time, which foon departeth, and wherein thou oughtest to plant, and sow all provisions for a long an happy life.



ver

the

112.

ver ne,

nft

nd

at

le id

hon

CHAP. III.

Wifest men have been abused by flutterers.

TAke care thou be not made a fool, by flatterers, for even the wifest men are abused by these. Know therefore, that flatterers are the worft kind of Traitours; for they will Arengthen thy imperfections, encourage thee in all evils, correct thee in nothing, but fo shadow and paint all thy vices, and follies, as thou shalt never, by their will, dicern evil from good, or vice from virtue. And because all men are apt to flatter themselves, to entertain the additions of other mens praifes is most perillous. Do not therefore praise thy felf, except thou wilt be counted a vain glorious fool, neither take delight in the praises of other men except thou deserve it, and receive it from such as are worthy and honest, and will withall warn thee of thy faults; for flatterers have never any virtue, they are ever base, creeping, cowardly persons. A flatterer is faid to be a beaft that biteth fmiling, it is faid by I/a, ab in this manner

ner: My pe ple, theythat praife thee feduce sber, and diforder the raths of thy feets and David defired God to cut out the tongue of a flatterer. But 't is hard to know them from friends, fo are they obsequious and full of protestations; for as a wolf refembles a dog, fo doth a flatterer a friend. A flatterer is compared to an Ape, who because the cannot defend the house like a dog, abour as an ox, or bear burdens as a horfe, doth therefore yet play tricks, and prouoke laughter: Thou mayeft be fure that he that will in private tell thee thy faults, is thy friend, for he adventures thy miflike, and doth hazard thy hatred; for there are few men that can endure it, every man for the most part delighting in felf-praife, which is one of the most univerfall follies which bewitcheth mankind.

CHAP. IV.

Private quarrels to be a-

BE carefull to avoid publick disputations at Feast, or at Tables, among



mong cholerick or quarrelsom persons; and eschew evermore to be acquainted or familiar with Rt stians, for thou shalt be in as much danger in contending with a brawler in a private quarrel, as in a battel, wherein thou mayest get honour to thy self and safety to thy Prince and Countrey; but if thou be once engaged, carry thy self bravely, that they may fear thee after. To shun therefore private sight, be well adviced in thy words and behaviour, for honour and shame is in the talk, and the tongue of a man causeth him to fall.

left not openly at those that are simple, but remember how much thou art bound to God, who hath made thee wifer. Defame not any woman publickly, though thou know her to be evil; for those that are faulty cannot endure to be raxed but will feek to be avenged of thee, and those that are not guilty cannot endure unjust reproch. And as there is nothing more shamefull and dishonest, than to do wrong, so truth it self cutteth his throat that carrieth her publikly in every place. Remember the divine, faying, He that keepeth bis mouth , keepub bis life. Do therefore right to all men

men where it may profit them, and thou shale thereby get much love, and for bear to speak evil things of men, though it be true (if thou be not constrained) and thereby thou shalt avoid

malice and revenge.

Do not accuse any man of any crime, if it be not to fave thy felf, thy Prince, or Countrey; for there is nothing more dishenourable(n.x: to Treason it felf) than to be an Acculet Norw thftand ing I would not have thee for any refpect loose thy reputation, or endure publick difgrace, for better it were not to live, than to live a coward, if the offence proceed not from thy felfe; if it do, it shall be better to compound it upon good terms, than to hazard thy felf; for if thou overcome, thou art vnder the cruelty of the Law, if thou art overcome, thou art dead or diffionoured. If thou therefore conrend, or discourse in argument; let it be with wife and fober men, of whom thou mayeft learn by realoning, and not with ignorant persons, for thou shalt thereby in truct those that will not thank thee, and utter, what they have learned from thee, for their own. But if thou know more that other men, utter it when it may do thee honour, and not in affemblies of ignorant

and common perfons.

1,

d

Speaking much alfo, is a fign of var nity; for he that is levith in words, is a niggard in deeds; and as S lomos faith, The mouth of a wife min is in bis beart, the beart of a fool is in bis mouth, because what be knowerh or thinketh, he utteresh: And by thy words and discourses, men will judge thee. For as Socrates faith, uch as thy words are, fuch will thy affections be esticemed; and fuch will thy deeds as thy affections , and fu b thy life as thy deeds. Therefore be advised what thou dost discourse of, whar thou ma ntainest; whether touching Religion, State, or vanity; for if thou erre in the first, thou shalt be accounted protane; if in the fecond, dar gerous; if in the third, indiscreet and foolish: He that cannot refrain from much speaking, is like a Citie without walls, and lette pa ns in the world a man cannot take, than to hold his tongue ; therefore, if thou observest this rule in all assemblies , thou shalt feldom erre; restrain thy choller, hearken much, and speak little; for the tongue is the inft ument of the greateft good and greatest evil that is done in the world. Ac94

According to Solomon . Life and death are in the power of the tongue; and as Euripides truly affirmeth, Every unbriated tongar, in the end fhall find it felf unforunte; for in all tha ever ! observed in the course of worldly things; I ever found that mens fortunes are oftner made by their tongues than by their virtues, and more mens fortunes overthrown thereby alfo, than by their vices. And to conclude, all quarrels, mischief, hatred, and destruction, arifeth from unadvised speech, and in much fpe ch there are many errours, out of which thy enemies shall ever take the most dangerous advantage. And as thou shalt be happy, if thou thy felf observe these things , fo shall it be most profitable for thee to avoid their companies that erre in that kind, and not to hearken to Tale. bearers, to inquificive persons, and fuch as busie themselves with other mens estates, that creep into houses as spies, to learn news which concerns them not; for affure thy felffuch perfons are most base and unworthy, and I never knew any of them proper, or respected amongst worthy or wife men.





nd

try it ly T

n

- I if

Take heed also that thou be not found a liar; for a lying spirit is hatefull both to God and man. A liar is commonly a Coward; for he dares not avow truth, A liar is trufted of no man he can have no credit, neither in publick nor private; and if there were no more arguments than this know that our Lord in S. John faith, That it is a vice proper to Satar, lying being opposite to the nature of God, which confifteth in Truth; and the gain of lying is nothing elfe, but not to be trusted of any, nor to be believed when we fay the truth, It is faid in the Proverbs, That God baterb falfe lips; and be that peapeth lies, fhall perift. Thus thou mayelt fee and find in all the Books of God, how odious and contrary to God a liar is; and for the world, believe it that it never did any man good (except in the extremity of faving life;) for a liar is of a bafe, unworthy, and cowardly spirit.

CHAP.



CHAP. V.

Three Rules to be observed for the preservation of a mans estate.

A Mongst all other things of the World, take care of thy estate, which thou shalt ever preserve, if thou observe three things; First, that thou know what thou haft, what every thing is worth that thou haft, and to fee that thou are not wasted by thy Servants and Officers. The second is, that thou never spend any thing before thou have it; for borrowing is the canker and death of every mans estate. The third is, that thou fuffet not thy felf to be wounded for other mens faults, and foourged for other mens offences; which is, to be farety for another; for thereby millions of men have been beggered and de troyed, paying the reckoning of other mens riot, and the charge of other mens folly and prodigality; if thou fmart, fmart for thine own fins, and above all things, be not made an Als

to carry the burdens of other men; If any friend defire thee to be his furery, give him a patt of what thou hast to pare, if he press thee farther, he is not thy friend at all, for friendship rather chooleth harm to it felf, than offereth it: If thou be bound for a ftranger, thou art a fool; if for a merchant, thou putteft thy estate to learn to swim: if for a Church-man, he hith no inheritance: if for a Lawyer, he will find an evalion by a fyllable or word, to abuse thee: if for a poor man, thou must pay it thy felf; if for a rich man, it need not: therefore from Suretithip, as from a Man flayer, or Enchanter, bleis thy felf; for the best profit and return will be this, that if thou force him for whom thou art bound. to pay it himfelf, he will become thy enemy, if thou lufe to pay it thy felf, thou wile be a beggar; and believe thy Father in this, and print it in thy thought, that what virtue foever thou haft be it never so manifold, if thou be poor withall, thou, and thy qualities shall be despited : Besides, poverty is oft times fent as a curfe of God, it is a shame amongst men, an impriforment of the mind, a vexation of cvery

,

u

u

y

0

y

3

et

er

et

y

f

y-

er

u

nd

10

every worthy spirit; thou shalt neither help thy self nor others, thou shalt drown thee in all thy virtues, having no means to shew them, thou shalt be a burthen, and an Eye-fore to thy friends, every man will sear thy company, thou shalt be driven basely to beg, and depend on others, to shatter unworthy men, to make dishonest shifts; and to conclude, poverty provokes a man to do infamous and detested deeds: Let no vanity therefore, or perswasson draw thee to that worst of

wordly miferies. If thou be rich, it will give thee pleasure in health, comfort in sickness, keep thy mind and body free, fave thee from many perils, relieve thee in thy elder years, selieve the poor, and thy honest Friends, and give means to thy posterity to live, and defend themfelves, and thine own fame, where it is faid in the Proverbs, That he shall be fore vexed that is furery for a ftranger, and be that bateth faretifbip is fare. It is further faid, The poor is bated even of his own neighbour, but the rich bave many friends. Lend not to him that is mightier than thy felf, for if thou lendest him, count it but los



ei-

ou

ale hy

n-

CCT

ft

eor

of

ce

ſs,

hy

19

nit be 7, e, de mil fi, be

be not furery above thy power, for if thou be furery, think to pay it.

CHAP. VI.

What fort of Servants are fittest to be entertained.

Etthy servants be such as thou mayest command, and entertain none about thee but Yeomen, to whom thou givest wages; for those that will ferve thee without thy hire, will cost thee treble as much as they that know thy fare: if thou trust any Servant with thy purfe, be fure thou take his account ere thou fleep; fer if thou put it off, thou wilt then afterwards, for tediousness, neglect it. I my felf have thereby loft more than lam worth. And what loever thy fervant gaineth thereby, he will never thank thee, but laugh thy fimplicity to fcorns and besides, this the way to make thy fervants thieves, which else would be honeft.

CHAP. VII.

Brave Rags wear soonest out of Fashion.

Exceed not in the humour of rags and braverie; for these will soon wear out of Fashion; but money in thy Purse will ever be in Fashion; and no man is esteemed for gay Garments, but by Fools and Women.

CHAP. VIII.

Riches not to be fought by

On the other fide, take heed that thou feek not Riches basely, nor arrain them by evil means, destroy no man for his wealth, nor take any thing from the Poor; for the crie and complaint thereof will pierce the Heavens. And it is most detestable before God, and most dishonourable before worthy men, to wrest any thing from



on

in

nd

its,

at or yyd a so

from the needy and labouring Soul. God will never profper thee in ought , if thou offend therein: But use thy poor neighbours and Tenants well, pine not them and their children, to adde fuperfluity and needleffe expences to thy felf. He that hath pitie on another mans forrow, shall be free from it himself; and he that delighteth in, and scorneth the mifery of another, shall one time or other fall into it himself. Remember this Pre cept . He ibat bath mercy on the poor .. lenacty unio the Lord, and the Lord will recombence him what he hat h given. I do not understand those for poor, which are vagabonds and beggers, but those that labour to live, fuch as are old and cannot travell, fuch poor widows and father leffe ch ldren as are ordered to be relieved, and the poor Tenants that travell to pay their Rents, and are driven to poverty by mischance, and not by riot or carelesse expences; on fuch have thou compassion, and God will bleffe thee for it. Make not the hungry foul for owfull, defer not thy gift to the necdy, for if he curse thee in the bitternesse of his foul, his prayer shall be heard of him that made him. CHAP.



CHAP. IX.

What Inconveniences happen to such as delight in Wine.

TAke especiall care that thou delight not in Wine, for there never was any man that came to honour or preferment that loved it; for it transformeth a man into a beaft, deeayeth health, poisoneth the breath, destroyeth naturall hear, brings a mans stomach to an artificiall hear, deformeth the face, rotteth the teeth, and to conclude, maketh a man contemptible, foon old, and despised of all wife and worthy men; hated in thy fervants, in thy felf and companions; for it is a bewitching and infectious vice, And remember my words, that it were better for a man to be subjed to any vice, than to it, for all other vanities and fins are recovered, but a Drunkard will never shake off the delight of beaftlineffe; for the longer it possesseth a man, the more he will delight in it, and the elder he groweth, the



Sir Walter Raleigh 103

the more he shall be subject to it; for it dulleth the spirits, and deffroyeth the body, as Ivie doth the old Tree; or as the worm that engendereth in the ker-

nel of the Nut.

de-

ne-

lour r it

de-

th .

ans

m-

to pti-

vife

cr-

5;

ous

nat

a

2-

2 - 1

Take heed therefore that fuch a cureleffe Canker poffesse not thy youth, nor fuch a beaftly infection thy old age; for then shall all thy 1 fe be but as the life of a beaft, and after thy death, thou shalt only leave a shamefull infamy to thy posterity, who shall study to forget that such a one was their Father. Anacharfis faith, The first draught for verb for bealth, the ficond for pleasure, she third for shame, the fourth for madneffe; but in youth there is not so much as one draught permitted; for it putteth fire to fire; and wasteth the naturall heat and seed of generation. And therefore, except thou desire to hasten thine end, take this for a generall rule, That thou never add any artificiall heat to thy body by Wine or Spice, untill thou find that time hath decayed thy naturall hear, and the fooner thou beginne't to help nature, the fooner the will forfake thee, and trust alrogether to Art: Who bave misforeune, faith So.

lamon. F 4lower, who have forrow and grief, who have trouble without fighting, stripes without cause, and faintness of eyest even they that fir at wine, and stram themselves to empty Caps: Pline saith, wine maketh the hand quivering, the eyes traterie, the night unquiet, lewed dreams, a plinking breath in the morning, and an utter forgetfulness of all thines.

Whofoever loveth Wine, shall not be trufted of any man; for he cannot keep a fecret. Wine maketha man not onely a beaft, but a mad man; and if thou love it, thy own Wife, thy Children, and thy friends will despile thee. In drink men care not what they fay, what offence they give, they forget comlinels, com mit disorders; and to conclude, offend all virtuous and honest company, and God most of all; to whom we daily pray for health, and a life free from pain: and yer by drunkenness, and gluttony, (which is the drunkenness of feeding) we draw on, saith Hefiot, a swift, hafty, untimely, cruel, and an infamous old age. And S. Augustine describeth Drunkenness in this manner: Ebrietas eft blandus Damon, dulce venenum (uave



Sir Walter Raleigh

fuave peccatum; quam, qui babet, feipfum non habet; quam qui facit, peccatum non facit, fed ipfi eft satum.

Drunkenness is a flattering Devil, asweet poison, a plea'ant fin; which whofoever hath, hath not himfelf, which whofoever doth commir, doth not commit fin, but he himself is wholly fin.

Innocentius faith, Quid turpius ebri. ofo cui fator in ore tremor in corpore, qui promit fulta, promit occulia, cui mens alienatur, facies transformatur, nullum fecretum ubi regnat ebrietas, & quid non aliud defenat malur, facundi colices quem non fecere difertum?

What is filthier than a drunken man to whom there is flink in the mouth, trembling in the bodie; which uttereth foolish things, and revealerh fecret things; whose mind is alienate, and face transformed? Whom have not plentifull cups made eloquent and talking?

ipes

reis

am

th,

the

wd

rn-

all

10

10

an

nd

at y

;

r

When DIOGENI to be fold, whereof the owner was given to drink, I thought at the laft, quoth quoth Diogenes, he would fpue out a whole houle, Sciebam inquit, quod domus tandem evomeres.

CHAP. X.

Let God be thy Protectour and Directour in all thy Actions.

Ow for the World, I know it too well, to perswade thee to dive into the practises thereof, rather stand upon thine own guard against all that tempt thee thereunto, or may practise upon thee in thy conscience, thy reputation, or thy purse; resolve that no man is wise or safe, but he that is hor nest.

Serve God, let him be the Authour of all thy actions, commend all thy endeavours to him that must either wither or prosper them, please him with prayer, lest if he frown, e contound all thy fortunes and labours,



Sir walter Raleigh to his S. 2. 107
labours, like the drops of Rain on the fandy ground: let my experienced advice, and fatherly influctions, fink deep into thy heart. So God direct thee in all his ways, and fill thy heart with his grace.

1 40-

nd

d it

•

FINIS.





The dutifull

ADVICE

OF

A LOVING SON

To his

AGED FATHER.

SIR,



Humbly befeech you, both in respect of the honour of God, your duty to his Church, and the comfort of your own soul, that you se-

riously consider in what tearns you stand; and weigh your self in a Christian ballance; taking for your counterposse the judgements of God: Take beed in time that the word TEKEL,

writ.



written of old against Belsbazzar, and interpreted by Daniel, be not verified in you, whose exposition was, Tow have been soized in the scale, and found

of tos tight weight.

Remember that you are now in the waining, and the date of your pilgramage well nigh expired, and now that it behoveth you to look towards your Countrey, your forces languisheth, your fenses impair, your body droops, and on every fide the ruinous Cottage of your faint and feeble flesh, threateneth the fall: And having fo many harbingers of death to premonish you of your end, how can you but prepare for so dreadfull a stranger. The young man may die quickly, but the old man cannot live long : the young mans life by cafualty may be abridged, but the old mans by no phyfick can be long adjourned, and therefore if green years should fometimes think of the grave, the thoughts orold age should continually dwell in the fame.

The prerogative of Infancy is innocency; of Child-hood, reverence; of Man-hood, maruriny; and of old age,

wildom.

And

And seeing then that the chiefest properties of wisdom, are to be mindfull of things past, carefull for things present, and provident for things to come : Use now the priviledge of na= tures talent, to the benefit of your own foul, and procure hereafter to be wife in well doing, and watchfull in the fore-fight of future harms. To ferve the world you are now unable, and though you were able, yet you have little cause to be willing, seeing that it never gave you but an unhappy welcome, a hurtfull entertainment, and now doth abandon you with an unfortunate fare-well.

You have long fowed in a field of flint, which could bring nothing forth but a crop of cares, and afflictions of spirit, rewarding your labours with remorfe, and affording for your gain,

eternal danger.

It is now more than a feaforable time to alter the course of so unthriving a husbandry, and to enter into the esild of Gods Chureh, in which, sowing the seed of repentant forrow, and watering them with the tears of humble contrition, you may hereaster reap a more beneficial harvest, and ga-

ther the fruits of everlasting com-

Remember, I pray you, that your fpring is spent, your summer over-past, you are now arrived at the fall of the leaf; yea, and winter colours have long

fince stained your hoary head.

Be not earelesse (saith Saint Augussine) though our loving Lord bear long with offenders; for the longer be stays, not finding amendment, the sore he will sourge when he comes to sudgement: And his patience in so long forbearing, is only to lend us respite to rejent, and not any wife to enlarge us leisure to

fin.

He that is toffed with variety of ftorms, and cannot come to his defired Port, maketh not much way, but is much turmoyled. So, he that hath passed many years, and purchased little profit, hath a long being, but a short life: For, life is more to be measured by well doing, than by number of years; Seeing that most men by many days do but procure meny deaths, and others in short space attain to the life of infinite ages; what is the body without the soul, but a corrupt carkasse? And what is the soul without God.

God, but a fepulchre of fin?

If God be the Way, the Life, and the Truth, he that goeth without him, strayeth; and he that liveth without him, dieth; and he that is not raught by him, erreth.

Well (faith Saint Augustine) God is our true and chiefe ft Life, from whom so revolt, is to fall; to whom to return, is to rife; and in whom to flay, is to

ftand fure.

God is he, from whom to depart, is to die; to whom to repair, is to revive; and in whom to dwell, is life for ever. Be not then of the number of those that begin not to live, till they be ready to die; and then after a foes defert, come to crave of God a friends entertainment.

Some there be that think to fnatch Heaven in a moment, which the best can scarce attain unto in the maintainance of many years; and when they have glutted themselves with worldly delights, would jump from Dire Diet to Lagarus Crown, from the service of Satan, to the solace of a Saint.

Bur be you well affured, that God is not so penurious of friends, as to hold himself and his Kingdom sale-





able for the refule and reversions of their lives, who have facrificed the principall thereof to his enemies, and their own bruitish lust; then onely ceasing to offend, when the ability of offending is taken from them.

True it is, that a thief may be laved upon the crosse and mercy found at the last gasp: But well (saith S. Angustine) though it be possible, yet it is scarce credible, that he in death should find savour, whose whole life deserved death; and that the repentance should be more excepted, that more for fear of bell, and love of himself, than for the love of God, and loubsommesse of sin, crieth for mercy.

Wherefore, good S I R, make no longer delays; but being so near the breaking up of your mortall house, take time before extremity, to pacific Gods

anger.

n,

at

12

is

-

....

Though you suffer the bud to be blasted, though you permitted the fruits to be perished, and the leaves to drie up; yea, though you let the boughs to wither, and the body of your tree to grow to decay, yet (alas) keep life in the root, for fear lest the whole tree become sewel for hell sire;

God , but a fepulchre of fin?

If God be the Way, the Life, and the Truth, he that gooth without him, strayeth; and he that liveth without him, dieth; and he that is not raught by him, erreth.

Well (faith Saint Augustine) God is our true and chiefest Life, from whom to revolt, is to fall; to whom to return, is to rife; and in whom to stay is to

ftand fure.

God is he, from whom to depart, is to die; to whom to repair, is to revive; and in whom to dwell, is life for ever. Be not then of the number of those that begin not to live, till they be ready to die; and then after a foes defert, come to crave of God a friends entertainment.

Some there be that think to fnatch Heaven in a moment, which the best can scarce attain unto in the maintainance of many years; and when they have glutted themselves with worldly delights, would jump from Dire Diet to Lagarus Crown, from the service of Satan, to the solace of a Saint.

But be you well affured, that God is not so penurious of friends, as to hold himself and his Kingdom sale-





able for the refuse and reversions of their lives, who have sacrificed the principall thereof to his enemies, and their own bruitish lust; then onely ceasing to offend, when the ability of offending is taken from them.

True it is, that a thief may be laved upon the crolle and mercy found at the last gasp: But well (saith S. Augustine) though it be possible, yet it is scarce credible, that he in death should find savour, whose whole life deserved death; and that the repentance should be more excepted, that more fur fear of bell, and love of himself, than for the love of God, and loathsommesse of sin, cristh for mercy.

Wherefore, good S I R, make no longer delays; but being so near the breaking up of your mortall house, take time before extremity, to pacific Gods

anger.

n,

ut

he

is m

9

is

:;

e e

Though you suffer the bud to be blasted, though you permitted the fruits to be perished, and the leaves to drie up; yea, though you let the boughs to wither, and the body of your tree to grow to decay, yet (alas) keep life in the root, for fear less the whole tree become sewel for hell sire;

For furely where the tree falleth, there it shall lie, whether towards the South or to the North, to heaven, or to hell; and such says it bringeth forth, such fruit shall it ever bear.

Death hath alreadic filed from you the better part of your natural forces, and left you now to be Lees, and remiffalls of your wearyish and dying

days.

The remainder whereof, as it cannot be long, so doth it warn you speedily to ransom your former loss; for what is age, but the Calends of death? It what importeth your present weakness, but an earnest of your approaching dissolution? you are now imbarked in your finall voyage, and not far from the stint and petiod of your course.

Be not therefore unprovided of such appurtenances as are behooveful in so perplexed and perrilous a Journey; death it self is very searfull, but much more terrible in respect of the judge-

ment it fummoneth us unto.

If you were now laid upon your departing bed, burthened with the heavie load of your former trespasses, and gored with the sting and prick of a fe-





re th ll;

u

3,

- エロヤー・エー

flered conscience; if you felt the cramp of death wrefting your heartftrings, and ready to make the ruefull divorce between body and foul; If you lay parting for breath, and fw mming in a cold and pale swear, wearied with frugling against your deadly pangs, O what would you give for an hours repentance; at what rate would you value a days contrition? Then worlds would be worth less in respect of a little respite, a short truce would feem more precious then the treasuries of an Empire, nothing would be fo much effeemed as a thore time of truce, which now by days, and months, and years, is most lavishly misspent.

Oh how deeply would it wound your woefull heart when looking back into your former life, you confidered many hainous and horrible effences committed, many pious works, and godly deeds omitted, and neither of both repented, your fervice to God promifed,

and not performed,

Oh how unconfolably were your case, your friends being fled, your senses affrighted, your thoughts amazed, your memory decayed, and your whole mind agast, and no part able to perform

form what it should; but onely your guilty conscience pestered with sin, that would continually upbraid you

with many bitter accusations.

Oh what would you think then, being flapped out of this mortall weed . and turned out both of fervice and house-room of this wicked world, you are forced to enter into uncouth and ftrange paths, and with unknown and ugly company, to be convented before a most severe judge, carrying in your conscience your Inditement, written in a perfect Register of all your mifdeeds, when you shall fee him prepared to give fentence upon you, against whom you have so often transgreffed, and the fame to be your Umpire, whom by fo many offences you have made your enemie, when nor onely the Devil, but even the Angels would plead against you, and your own felf, in despight of your self, be your own most sharp appeacher.

Oh what would you do in these dreadfull exigents, when you saw the ghastly Dragon, and huge gulph of hell, breaking our with most fearfull slames, when you heard the weeping, wailing, and gnashing of teeth; the



rage of those hellish monsters, the horrour of the place, the terrour of the company, and the eternity of all chose torments.

Would you then think them wife that thould delay in to weighty matters, and idlely play away the time allotted, to prevent these incolerable calamities? Would you then count it secure, to nurse in your own bosom so many Serpents as sins? and to softer in your foul so many malic ous accusers, as mortall and horrible offences? Would you not think one life too little to repent in for so many, and so great iniquities, every one whereof were enough to throw you into those unspeakable and intolerable torments.

And why then (alas!) do you not at the leaft devote that small remnant, and surplusage of these your later days, procuring to make an atones ment with God, and to free your Soul and Conscience from that corruption, which by your fall hath crept in-

to it.

ur

.

Be

e-

d

11

d

d

n

r

.

....

t

3

Those very eyes that behold, and read this discourse, those very ears that are attentive to hear it, and that very understanding that considereth

and conceiveth it, shall be cited as certain witnesses of these rebearsed things. In your own body shall you experience thefe deadly Agonies, and in your Soul shall you feelingly find these terrible fears; yea, and your prefent estate, is in danger of the deepest harms, if you do not the fooner recover your felf into that fold and family of Gods faithfull servants.

What have you gotten by being fo long a customer to the World, but falle ware, fuitable to the shop of such a merchant, whose traffick is toyl, whose wealth is trash, and whose gain is miferie ? What intereft have you reaped, that might equall your detriment in grace and virtue? Or what could you find in the vale of tears, that was answerable to the favour of God, with loffe whereof, you were contented to buy it?

You cannot now be inveigled with the passions of youth, which making a partiality of things, fers no distance between counterfeit and currant, for thefe are now worn out of force, by tract of time are fallen into reproof, by

triall of their folly.

Oh let not the crazie cowardnesse of fich



flesh and bloud, daunt the prowesse of an intelligent person, who by his wisdom cannot but difcern how much more cause there is, and how much more needfull it is to ferve God, than this wicked world.

But if it be the ungrounded prefumption of the mercy of God, and the hope of his affistance at the last plunge (which indeed is the ordinary lure of the devil) to reclaim finners from the pursuit of Repentance. Alas, that is 100 palpable a collusion to mislead a found and ferviceable man, howfoever it may prevail with fick and ill-affected judgements: who would rely upon eternall affairs, upon the gliding flipperinefle, and running freams of our uncertain life ? who, but one of diftempered wits, would offer fraud to the Decipherer of all thoughts; with whom diffemble we may to our coft, but to deceive him, is impossible.

-

n

u

-

h

O

h

or by of

Shall we effeem it cunning to rob the time from him, and bestow it on his enemies, who keepeth tale of the least minutes, and will examine in the end how every moment hath been imployed. It is a prepofterous kind of policie, in any wife conceit to fight

a gaing

against God, till our weapons be bluned, our forces consumed, our limbs imporent, and our best time spens; and then when we fall for faintness, and have fought our selves almost dead, to

prefume on his mercy.

Oh! no, no, the wounds of his most facted body, so often rubbed, and renewed by our fins and every part and parcel of our bodies so divers, and sundry ways abused, will be then as so many whet-stones and incentives, to edge and exasperate his most just revenge against us.

It is a strange piece of Art, and a very exorb tant course, when the ship is sound, the Pylot well, the Marriners strong the Gale savourable, & the Sea calingto ly idlely at the road, burning so sea sound be weather. And when the Ship leaketh, the Pylot sick, the Marriners saint, the Storms boysterous, and the Seas a turm byl of outragious Surges, then to launch forth, (hoise up sail) and secont for a long voyage into a far Country.

Per fuch is the skill of these evening.
Repenters, who though in the foundnels of their health, and perfect also of
their reason, they cannot resolve to

Tie:

m

fi

w

fit

ab

be

of

an

cut the Cabks, and weigh the fin-

b

d

to

ft

20

d

n-

4

25

e

-

is

18

ip

rs C

,

2

#13

fq.

o it

Neverthelesse, they feed themselves with a strong perswasion, that when they are associated, their wits distracted, the understanding dusked, and the bodes and souls wracked, and tormented with the throbs and gripes of a mortall sicknesse; then forsooth they will begin to think of their weightiess matters, and become sudden Saints, when they are scarce able to behave themselves like reasonable creatures.

No, no, if neither the Canon, Civil, nor the Common Law will allow that man (perished in judgement) should make any Testament of his temporall substance; how can be that is animated with inward garboyls of an unsettled conscience, distrained with the wringing fits of his dying slesh, maimed in all his ability, and circled in on every side with many and strange incumberances, be thought of due discretion to dispose of his chiefest Jewell, which is his Soul; and to dispatch the whole manage of all evernity, and of the treasures of

Heaven, in so short a spurt?

No, no, they that will loyter in seedtime, and begin to sow when others

G reap;



reap; they that will riot cut their health, and beg n to cast their accounts when they are scarce able to speak; they that will slumber out the day, and enter their journey when the light doth fail them; let them blame their own folly, if they die in debt, and be eternall beggers, and sall head-long into the lap of endlesse perdiction.

Let such listen to S. cyprian's lesson, Let, saith he, the grievousnesse of our fore be the measure of our sorrow; let a deep wound bave a deep and dil gent cure: Let no mans Convition be lesset ban

bis Crime.

FINIS.



できたかんかん **:***

Sir Walter Raleigh's

SCEPTICK.

The SCEPTICK doth neither affirm, neither deny any Pofition : but doubteth of it, and opposeth his Rea-Jons against that which is affirmed, or denied, to juftifie bis not-confenting.



their ounts

cak;

, and light

their nd be

g infon; f our

let a

gent

t ban

Is firft Reason arifeth, from the confideration of the great difference amongst living Creatures, both in the matter and manner of their

Generations, and the severall Consti-

tutions of their bodies.

Some living Creatures are by copulation, and fome without it : & that either by Fire, as Crickers in tornaces; or corrupt water ,as Gnats ; or fime, as Fregsjor dirt , as Worms ; or herbs , as Cauker-worms fome of athes, as Beetles;

fome

Some of trees, as the Worms Plens bred in the wild Fig-tree; some of living creatures putrified, as Bees of Bulls, and Walps of Horses. By Copulation many creatures are brought forth a. live, as Man; fome in the egg, as Birds, some in an unshapen piece of fiefh, as Bears. Thefe great differences cannot but cause a divers and contrary temperament, and qualitie in those creatures, and consequently, a great divertity in their phantalie and conceit; fo that they apprehend one and the fame object, yet they must do it after a divers manner: for is it not absurd to affirm, That creatures differ fo much in temperature, and yet a gree in conceit concerning one and the fame object ?

see- Bue this will more plainly appear, ing. if the inftruments of Sente in the body be observed: for we shall find, that as these Instruments are affected and disposed, so doth the Imagination conceit that which by them is connexed unto it. That very object which seemeth unto us White, unto them which have the Laundise seemeth Pale, and Red unto those whose Ejes are bloud shot. For connect them as living

1

creatures have fome white, fome pale, fome red eyes, why should not one and the same object feem to some white, to some red, to some pale? If a man rub his eye, the figure of that which he beholdeth feemeth long or narrow; is it then not likely, that those creatures which have a long and flanting Papill of the eye, as Goats, Foxes, Cats, sec. do convey the talhion of that which they behold under another form to the imagination, than those that bave

round Papils do?

bred

living

Bulls,

lation

th a.

g, as

ce of

cren-

Con-

tic in

ly, 2

and

one

ob flu

it not

dif-

et a-

d the

pear,

n the

find,

cacd

ation

nex-

vhich

them

Paic,

are

ising

crea-

Who knoweth nor, that aGla Te prefenteth the outward obj et smoother, or greater, according to the making of the glaffe; If it be hollow, the object feemeth smaller than it is; if the glasse be crooked, then the object feemeth long and narrow. And glasses there be. which present the head of him that looke h in them, downwards, and the heels upwards. Now then, feeing the eye, which is the instrument of Sight, in fome living reatures is more outward, in ome more hollow, in fome plain, in some greater, in some lesse; it is very probable, that Fishes Men, Lions, and Dogs, whose eyes so much differ, do not conceive the self same object after the fame G 3



fame manner, but diverfly, according to the diversitie of the eye, which offer-

eth it unto the phantafie.

Touch. The same reason holdeth in ing. Touching; for seemeth it not absurd to think, that those creatures which are covered with Shels, those which are covered with Scales, those which are covered with Hairs, and those which are Smooth, should all be alike softile in Touching? and every one of them converge the image, or qualitie of the same object which they touch in the very same degree of heat or cold, of drinels or mosture, roughness or smoothness, unso the imagination?

Hear. So might it be shewed in Hearing. ing: for how can we think that the Ear which hath a narrow passage, & the Ear which hath an open & wide passage, do receive the same sound in the same degree? or that the Ear whose inside is full of hair, doth hear in the same just measure, that the Ear doth whose inside is smooth? Since experience sheweth, that it we stop, or half stop our Ears, the sound cometh not to us in the same manner & degree, that it doth is our ears be open.

The

cording to offer-

all be every ge, or they heat oughnati-

that lage, wide in hofe

the doth eriftop is in oth

The

smels The like may be thought of ling. Smelling; for man himself abounding with Fleagm, is otherwise affected in smelling, than he is, if the parts about the head be full of bloud; and many things afford a delightfull finell to some living creatures, which smel to other living creatures icemeth not to be so.

Tift. In the Taft the fame reason ap. m: peareth; for to a rough a d drie tongue, that very thing f. emeth bitter (as in an Aga.) which to the moi ter tongue feemeth not to be fo. Divers creatures then having tongues drier, or moifter, according to their leverall temperatures, when they tast the same thing must needs conce t it to be according as the instrument of their tast is affected, either bitter, or fweet, er. For even as the hand in the ftriking of the Harp, though the stroak be one, yet caufeth a found, fometimes high, fometimes base, according to the quality of the string that is strucken; Even so one and the fame outward object is diverfly judged of, and conceited, according to th: feveral and divers qualities of the instrument of Sense, which conveieth it to the imagination. Oyntment is plea-G 4

fing to Man; but Beetles and Bees cannot abide it. Oyl to man is profitable; but it killeth Bees and Wasps. Cicuta seedeth Quails, & Henbane Sows; but both of these hurt Man. If a Man eat Ants he is sick; but the Bear being sick, recovereth by eating them.

If then one and the very fame thing to the red eye feem red, to another pale, and white to another: If one and the fame thing , feem not hot or cold , drie or moift, in the fame degree to the severall creatures which touch it; If one and the felf-fame found feem more shrill to that creature which hath a narrow ear, and more base to him that hath an open ear: If the fame thing, at the fame time, feem to afford a pleasant and displeasant Smell to divers and feverall creatures: If that feem bitter in taft to one, which to another feemeth fweet, that to one hurtfull, which to another feemeth healthfull: I may report how these things appear divers to severall creatures, and feem to produce divers effects.

But what they are in their own nature, whether red or white, bitter or fweet, healthfull or hurtfull, I cannot tell. For why should I presume topro-

er

Bees

pro-

and

Hen-Man.

Bear

hem.

hing

ther

and

old .

to

it:

eem

ath

nim

me

bre

di-

120

10-

rt-

h-

p-

d

7

t

r

fer my conceit and imagination, in affirming that a thing is thus, or thus, in its own nature, because it seemeth to me to be so, before the conceit of other living creatures, who may as well think it to be otherwise in each one nature, because it appeareth otherwise to them than it doth to me?

They are living creatures as well as I: why then should I condemn their conceit and phantafie, concerning any thing, more than they may mine? They may be in the truth and I in errour, as well as I in truth, and they err. It my conceit must be believed before theirs. great reason that it be proved to be truer than theirs. And this proof must be either by demonstration, or without it. Without it none will believe. Certainly, if by demonstration, then this demonstration must feem to be true, or not feem to be time. If it feem to be true, then will it be a question, whether it be fo indeed as it feemeth to be; and to alleadge that for a certain proof, which is uncertain and queftionable, feemeth abfurd.

If it be faid, that the imagination of Man judgeth truer of the outward object, than the imagination of other

living creatures doth, and therefore to be credited above others, (besides that which is already said,) shis is easily resured by comparing of Man with other creatures.

It is confelled, the Dog excelleth Man in smell, and in hearing: and whereas there is faid to be a two-told discourse, one of the mind, another of the tongue and that of the mind is faid to be exercised in chusi g that which is convenient, and refusing that which is hurtfull in knowledge, justice, and thankfulneffe: This creature chuich his food, refuseth the whip, fawneth on his Master, defendeth his house, revengeth him elf of those strangers that hurt him. And Hover mentioneth Argus, the dog of H'y/les, who knew his mafter, having been from home fo many years, that at his return, all the people of his house had forgot him. This creature, faith chrifippin, is not void of Logick: for when in following any beaff, he cometh to three feverall ways, he fmelleth to the one, and then to the fecond; and if he find that the beaft which he purimeth he not fled one of thefe a ways, he presently without smelling amy further to it, taketh the third way:

which, faith the same Philosopher, is as if he reasoned thus, the Beast must be gone either this, or this, or the other way; but neither this nor this; Erge, the third: and so away be runneth.

If we consider his skill in Physick, it is sufficient to help himself: it he be wounded with a dart, he useth the help of his Teeth to take it out, of his Torgue to cleanse the wound from corruption: he seemeth to be well acquainted with the Precept of Hippersates, who saith, that the Rest of the Foot is the Physick of the Foot, and therefore if his foot he hurt, he holdeth it up that it may rest: if he be sick, he giveth himself a Vomit by easing of Gratse, and recovereth himself. The Deg then we see is plentifully furnished with inward discourse.

Now outward speech is not needfull to make a creature Reasonable, esse a dumb Man were an unreasonable Crea-

ture.

there-

thers,

faid,)

paring

elleth

and

-told

er of

s faid

hich

hich

and

1 erh

h on

ven-

hurt

the

ha.

ars,

his

ire,

ck:

he

d;

he

And do not Philosophers thems lives reject this as an enemie to knowledge and therefore they are filest when they are instructed; and yet even as Barbarous and strange people of speech, but we understand it not, neither do we per-

perceive any great difference in their words : but a difference there feemeth to be, and they do expresse their thoughts and meanings one to another by those words. Even so those creatures, which are commonly called unreasonable, do feem to parlie one with another; and by their speech to understand one the other. Do not Birds by one kind of freech call their young ones, and by another cause them to hide themselves? Do they not by their severall voices expresse their severall passi. ons of joy, of grief, of fear in fuch manner, that their fellows understand them ? Do they not by their voice foreshow things to come ? But we will return to that creature we first did inflance in. The Dog delivereth one kind of voice when he hunteth, another when he howleth, another when he is beaten, and another when he is angry. These creatures then are not void of outward speech,

If then these creatures excell Man in sense, and are equall to him in inward and outward discourse, why should not their conceits and imaginations conveigh the outward object in as true a manner as ours? and if so, then seeing

their



their imaginations are divers, and they conceit it diverfly according to their divers temperaments, I may tell what the outward object feemeth to me; but what it feemeth to other creatures, or whether it be indeed that which it feemeth to me, or any other of them, I know nor.

But be it granted, that the ludgement of Man in this case, is to be preferred before the Judgement of Beafts; yet in Men there is great difference; both in respect of the outward shape, and a fo of the temperature of their bodies: For the bodie of the Sorth an diftereth in shape from the bodie of the indian : the reason of it ariseth (fay the Dogmaticks) from a predominan. cie of humours in the one more than in the other; and as feverall humours are predominant, so are the phantasies and conceits feverally framed and effected. So that our countrey-men delight in one thing, the Indian not in that, but in another which we regard not. This would not be, if their conceits and ours were both alike; for then we thould like that which they do, and they would diflike that which we would diffike It is evident alfo, that men differ very much in

ot na ng

their

meth

ther

ires.

ona-

and

one

nes,

nide

eve-

ffi.

an-

and

re-

re-

in-

ind

her

e is

in

rd

in the temperature of their bodies, elfe why thould some more easily digest Bief than Shel-fish ? and other be mad for the time, if they drink wine? There was an old woman about Arbeus, which drunk three drams of Cucuea (every dram weighing fixtic Barley corns, and eight drams to an ounce) without hurt, Lylis, without hat, took four drams of Poppie; and Demophon, which was Gentleman-Sewer to Alexander, was very cold when he flood in the fun, or in a hot bath, but very hot when he flood in the shadow. Atornageras felt no pain if a Scorpion stung him. And the Pfilli (a people in Libia, whole bodies are venom to ferpents) if they be flung by serpents, or Asps, receive no hurt at

The Ethiopians, which inhabit the river Hydaspis, do eat serpents and scorpions without danger, Lothectus a Chirurgian, at the smell of a Sturger on, would be for the time mad. Audron of Argos, was so little thirstie, that without want of drink, he travelled through the hot and dry countrey of Lybia. Tiberius (asar would see very well in the dark. Artst the image

cft

ad

ere

ch

ry

nd

rt.

of

n-

ry

a

bo

in

il-

re

y

at

d

2

pe

t

of yher

of a Man went always before him.

If then it be so, that there be such differences in Men, this must be by reafon of the divers remperatures they have, and divers disposition of their conceit and imagination; for, if one hate, and another love the very same thing, it must be that their phantasses differ, esseall would love it, or all would bate it. These Men then, may tell how these things seem to them good, or bad; but what they are in their own Nature they cannot tell.

If we will hearken to mens opinions, concerning one and the fame matter, thinking thereby to come to the knowledge of it, we thall find this to be impossible; for, either we must believe what all men fay of it, or what fome men only fay of it. To believe what all men lay of one & the lame thing, is not possible; for then we thall believe Contrarieties; for some men fay, that that very thing is pleasant, which other say is displeasant. If it be faid, we must believe onely some men, then let it be thewed who those some men are; for the Platonifts will believe Plato, but the Epicures Epicurus, the Pringgerians Pythagoras, & other Philosophers the

ma fters

n afters of their own Sects: so that it is doubted, to which of all these we shall give credit. If it be said, that we must credit the greatest number; this seemeth childish; for there may be amongst other Nations a greater number which denie that very point, which the greatest number with us do affirm; so that hereof nothing can certainly be affirmed.

This Argument seemeth to be surther confirmed, if the differences of the Senses of Hearing, Seeing, Smelling, Touching, and Tasting be considered; for that the Senses differ, it seemeth

plain.

Painted Tables (in which the art of Slanting isused) appear to the Eye, as if the parts of them were some higher, and some lower than the other, but to the Touch they seem not to be so.

Honey seemeth to the Tongue sweet, but unpleasant to the Eye: so Oyntment doth recreate the Smell, but it offendeth the Tast. Rain-water is profitable to the Eyes, but it hurteth the Lungs. We may tell then, how these things seem to our severall senses, but what they are in their own nature we cannot tell: for why should not a man

credit any one of his fenfes as well as

Every object seemeth to be presented diverfly unto the feverall inftruments of Senfe. An Apple to the Touch feemeth smooth, sweet to the Smell, and to the Eye yellow; but whether the Apple have one of thefe qualities onely, or more than these qualities, who can tell? The Organ hath many Pipes, all which are filled with the same blast of wind, varied according to the capacitie of the feverall Pipes which receive it : even fo the qualitie of the Apple may be but one, and this one quality may be varied, & feem yellow to the Eye, to the Touch smooth, and fweet to the Smell, by reason of the divers instruments of the Sense, which apprehend this one quality diverfly.

It may be also, that an Apple hath many qualities besides; but we are not able to conceive them all, because we want sit means and instruments to apprehend them. For suppose that some Man is born blind, and deaf, and yet can touch, smell, and tast; this man will not think that there is any thing, which may be seen or heard, because he wantesh the Senses of hearing and see-

138 Sir Walter Raleigh's Sceptick.

reasing; he will onely think there are those qualities in the object, which by reason of his three Senses he conceiveth: Even so the Apple may have many more qualities; but we cannot come to know them, because we want fit instruments for that purpose.

ordained as many influments of Sense, as there are sensible objects; I demand, What Nature? for there is a consused controversis about the very Essence of Nature. Some affirming it to be one thing, others another, sew a greeing: so that what the quality of an Apple is, or whether it hath one

qual tie or many, I know not.

Let a man also consider, how many things that are separated, and by themselves, appear to differ from that which they seem to be, when they are in a mass or lump, the scrapings of the Goats horn seems white, but in the horn they seem black, but in the lump white. The stone Tanaru, being polished, seemeth white, but unpolished & rough, it seemeth yellow. Sands being separated, appear rough to the Touch, but a great heap, soft. I may then report, how these things appear, but whether they are so indeed, I know not.

by eive

nt

th of I is

e

20024022:3202222

Sir Walter Raleigh's OBSERVATIONS

Concerning the Causes of the Magnificencie and Opulencie of CITIES.

HAT the onely way to civilize and reform the favage and barbarous Lives, and corrupt Manners of fuch people, is,

To be dealt withall by gentle and loving Converfation among them, to attain to the knowledge of their Language, and of the multitude of their special discommodities and inconveniences in their manner of living.

2 The next is to get an admired reputation amongst them, upon a solid and true foundation of Pietie, lustice, and wisdom, conjoyned with fortitude and power.

3 The

3 The third is, discreetly to possess them with a knowledge of the condirion of their own estate. Thus O'phe and Amphin , were faid to draw after them the beaft of the field, erc.

And this must be first wrought by a visible representation, of the certaintie, truth, and finceritie of thefe, together with the felicitie of a reformed

effare

All which is but to give foundation, borrom, and firm footing unto action, and to prepare them to receive wholefom and good advise, for the future profit and felicitie of themselves and

their posteritie.

For the more commodious effecting of this Reformation in a rude and barbarous people, they are to be perswa= ded to withdraw and unite themselves into feverall Colonies; that by it an interchangeable communication commerce of all things may more commodioufly be had, and that they may so live together in civilitie, for the better fuccour and welfare of one another: And thereby they may more eafily be infructed in the Christian Faith, and governed under the Magifrates and ministers of the King, or other

ther superiour power, under whom this Resonantion is sought. Which course the Stoick tells, that theseus took, after he had taken upon him the Government of the Ashimans, whereby he united all the people into one Citie, that before lived dispersedly in many Villages. The like is put in practice at this day by the Persugalls and selected at they may with less difficultie and hinderance reform the rough behaviour, and savage life of the people of Brazile, who dwell scattered and dispersed in caves and cottages made of boughs & leaves of the Palm-trees.

Alexander the Great built more than feventie Cities: Setums built three Cities, called Apamer, to the honour of his wife; and five called Leo-ducea, in memorie of his mother; and five called Sciencia, to the honour of

himfelf.

fi.

-

a 1-

d

Safetie



Safetie for Defence of the People and their goods, in and near the Town.

Situation of Cities, forSefe of Saferie, by fome natural 17 15 firength, commod oufness for Plenty. Navigation, and Conduct, for the attaining of p'entie of all good things, for the fustenance & comfort of mans life, and to draw trade and entercourse of other Nations; as if the same be situate in such fort ,as many people have need to repair thither for fome natural commoditie or other of the Countrey, which by traffick and transpertation of comodities, whereof they have more plentie than will supplie their own necessitie, or for receiving of things whereof they have carcitie. And much better will it be, if the place afford some notable commoditie of it felf, from whence other Nations may more readily, and at better rate attain the same : Likewise, and withall, be

be so fertil, pleasant, and healthfull of it self, that it may afford plentie of good things, for the delight and confort of the inhabitants.

Multi- In former times great Nations, rude of Kings and Potentates have entried of dured that peonflicts, and held tant. it high Policie, by all means to increase their Cities, with multitudes of inhabitants. And to this end the Romans ever furnished themselves with strength and power, to make their neighbour-People, of necessitie, willing to draw themselves to Rome to dwell, and overthrow their Towns and Villages of mean strength, down to the ground.

So did they for this cause utterly destroy many Cities, bringing always the vanquished Captives to a one, for the augmentation of that Citie.

Romuius, after a mighty fight with the Sabines, condescended to Peace, upon condition that Tatius their King should come with all their people to dwell at Rame: Tatius did accept, and made choice of the Capitol, and the Mount Quirmatis for his seat and Pallace.

The fame course h ld Tamberlane the



the Great, whereby he enlarged the great Samar anda, Rill bringing unto it, the richest and wealthiest Citizens he had subdued.

And the Ottoman, to make the Citie Constantinople rich and great, brought to it many thousand Families, especially Artificors out of the subdued Cities; as Mahomes the great from Tr bizond, Selim the First from Cairo, and Sale-

man from Tauris.

Authoritie and necessitie, without the consideration of the conveniencies, and commodiousness of Situation above mentioned, are of small moment in the foundation of a Citie; thereby onely it would be unlikely, either to grow or continue in Magnissencie or Opulencie; for if Profit, Height, and Delight go not companions therewith, no authoritie or necessitie can retain much People or Walth.

But if the place whereupon a Citie is to be founded, be commodious for the afore aid conveniences, which help greatly for the felicitie of this life; then, no doubt, the same is likely to draw much abundance of people and riches unto the same, whereby it may, by the help of Arts and Industrie, in

time



he

nto

ns:

tie

ht al

es;

d,

ur

s,

nt

y

O

or

10

h.

n

ie

or p

:

d

y,

e

time, become magnificent & glorious. Unto the good estate greatness, and gloric of a Citie, those things hereafter ment oned do greatly avail, and are of much importance, viz.

Relgi Religion, which is of fuch force gion, and might to amplifie Cities and Dominions, and of fuch auradive virtue to replenish the same with pcople and wealth, and to hold them in due obed ence, as none can be more; for withour adoration of some Dietie, no common wealth can subfift.

Witness Ferulalem Rome, Conftantinople and all other cities that have been famous for the profession of Religion, or Divine worthin And no marvel, for there is not any thing in this world of more efficacie & force to alluje and draw to it the hearts of Men, than God. which is the wmmum banum. He is carefully defired, and continually fought for of all creatures; for all regard Him as their last end and refuge.

Light things apply themselves upwards, heavy things downwards; the Heavens to Revolution, the Herb, to Howers, Trees to bear fruir, Beafts to prefent their kind and Man in leeking his tranquilitie and everlating glo-14

But forasimuch as God is of so high a nature as the sence and understanding of Man cannot conceive it, every man directly turns himself to that place where he leaves some print of his power, or declares some sign of his assistance. And to such persons whom he seemeth more especially to have revealed himself

Academies, & Schools of Learning with convenient immunities and privileges for Scholars, and means for Recreation for Delight, are of great importance to enlarge and enrich a citie : torasmuch as men long for honour and profit, and of Arts & liberal sciences some bring certain wealth to men, and fome promotions & preferments to honourable functions: for by this means, not onely young men,& those that are defirous of Learning and Virtue in the same Commonwealth, will be retained in their own Countrey; but also strangers will be drawn home to them. And the more will this be available if occasion be given to Scholars and students, to rife to degrees of Honour and preferment by their learned excercifes, and that by the Policie of the same citie, good Wits

be

10

in



Wits be accounted of and rewarded well: that the fame Academies and Schools be flored with plentie of Doctours and learned men, of great fame and reputation,

ing

1211

ace

W-

ift-

he

re-

21-

ni_

nd

re

n-

ng

a

in

8

s:

ng

re

n-

yn

be

re

nt by

Courts of Luffice, with due exeof Fu- cution of the same in a citie, do . much enable, enlarge, & enrich it; for it fasteneth a great liking in a citie to virtuous men, and fuch as be wealthie, that therein they may be free, and in lafetie from the violence of the oppressions of coverous and wicked men : and there will be rather resort thither to inhabit, or traffi k there as occasions may minister unto them, And many others that have cause of suite will repair thither, whereas they may be fure to find Iudgement and luft ce duely executed, whereby the citie must needs be enlarged and enriched; for our lives. and all that ever we have are in the hands of luftice; fo that if luftice be not administred amongst men, in vain is there any focietic and commerce, or any other thing can be profitable or fafe; so much is love and charitie failed, and iniquitie increased upon the face of the carth. H 2

The

A.c.f. The excellencie and multitude I kewife of Artificets exercifing ceil. the r manuall arts and trades, do m ryelloufly increase and enrich a State, whireof fome are necessary, fome commodious for a civil life . other f me are of pomp and orna. ment, and other some of delicacie and curiofitie, whereof doch follow con course of people that labour and work. and current money which doth enrich and Supply Materials for labourers, and work-men, buying and felling, transportation from place to place, which doth imp'oy and increase the arrificious and cunning parts of the wit of Man; and this are and exqu funeffe of work-manship and skill is so powerfull herein, that t far excels the simple commodities and materials that Nature produceth; and is alone fuffi. cient of it felf to make a Citie or Surte, both magnificent and glorious : and the daily experience we have in these our dayes, and in former times, doth manifeftly approve the same, and make evident without all contradi-Aion.

Some naturall benefits that a Citie also may have for the excellency of Art,



ude

ing

do

y ,

na.

go

rk,

ng.

ce,

wit lic+

6

the

met Mi-

te,

nd ele

s.

nd

di-

te

rt,

or work manship of some special commodities above any other place, either through the qualitie of the Water, or other matter whatsoever, or some hidden mysterie of the inhabitants in working thereof, may be a great help for the enlargement and enriching of a citie.

The command of a Countrie that affordeth some proper commoditie, is of it self sufficient mightily to bring a Citie to great wealth, and to advance it to great power, and draweth thereby dependence and concounse, much advantagious also, as well for the pub-

Ick weal, as the private person.

A Citie also may be Lord of much Merchandize and traffick, by means of the commodious situation to many Nations, to whom it serveth and hath relation to, as Ware houses, Roomth and Store-houses, by reason whereof, the nations adjoyning do use to resort thereunto to make their provisions of such things. And this consisteth in the largenesse of the Ports, the situation of the gulphs and creeks of the seas, in the Navigable rivers and channels, and the plain and safe ways that leadeth to the Citie.

H 3

A tuff. The excellencie and mult rude cen. I kewife of Artificets exercifing ther manuall arts and trades, do m ryelloufly increase and enrich a State, whireof fome are necessary, fome commodious for a civil life, other f me are of pomp and orna. ment, and other some of del cacie and curiofitie, whereof doth follow con course of people that labour and work, and current money which doth enrich and supply Materials for labourers, and work-men, buying and felling, transportation from place to place, which doth imp'oy and increase the artificious and cunning parts of the wit of Man; and this art and exquiseneffe of work manship and skill is so powerfull herein, that t far excels the simple commodities and materials that Nature produceth; and is alone luffi. cient of it felf to make a Citie or State. both magnificent and glorious : and the daily experience we have in these our dayes, and in former times, doth manifestly approve the same, and make evident without all contradi-Aion.

Some naturall benefits that a Citie also may have for the excellency of Art,



ing

do

cie

nk.

ich

ng,

Ce,

ar-

wit ic+

6

he

114

fi.

te,

nd

ele

li-

or

or work manship of some special commodit es above any other place, either through the qualitie of the Water, or other matter whatsoever, or some hidden mysterie of the inhabitants in work ng thereof, may be a great help for the enlargement and enriching of a citie.

The command of a Countrie that affordeth some proper commoditie, is of it self sufficient mightily to bring a Citie to great wealth, and to advance it to great power, and draweth thereby dependence and concourse, much advantagious also, as well for the public weal, as the private person.

A Citie also may be Lord of much Merchandize and traffick, by means of the commodious situation to many Nations, to whom it serveth and hath relation to, as Ware houses, Roomth and Store-houses, by reason whereof, the nations adjorning do use to refort thereunto to make their provisions of such things. And this consisteth in the largenesse of the Ports, the situation of the gulphs and creeks of the seas, in the Navigable rivers and channels, and the plain and safe ways that leadeth to the Citie.

H 3

or that come, or turn by or near it. Priviledge and freedom from leage. Customs and exactions, doth greatly increase the Trade, and draw inhabitants to a citie, whereby the fame may become both rich and powerfull; whereof the Marts and Fairs, and Markets bear good witneffe, which are frequented with great concourse of people, Tradesmen and Merchants, for no other respect, but that they are there free and frank from Customs and exactions. And the cities in Flanders are lively telimonies here. of, where the Customs are very fmall.

By reason whereof, all such as have erected new Cities in times past to draw concourse of people unto it, have granted large immunities, and priviledges at the least, to the first n-

habitants thereof.

The like have they done that have restored Cities emptied with Plague, consumed with Wars, or afflicted with Famin, or some order scourge of God. In respect whereof, Freedom of Cities hath been often g anted to such as would with their families, inhabit there, or would bring Corn

ſ:

fe

A

and other necessaries for provision of victual.

The Romans, to increase their Cities. made the Towns that well deferved of them (which they after called Municipi.) to be partakers of their franchifes and priviledges.

m th

w ne

T-

2.

0=

10

re

ns

in

2.

y

15

3

d

1.

rė

e,

ł.

3

15

1.

n

The first deviles The first means the Romans used to allure peoof Rome to a's ple to make their habilare ftrangers. aus Sanctuarie, tations rather in Rome than else where, was the opening the Sanctuarie, & giving libertie and freedom to all that would come unto them. In respect whereof, there flocked this ther, with their goods, numbers of people that were either racked with exactions, thrust out of their habitations, or unsafe, or unsure for their lives in their own Countreys for Religion fake.

The very same reason in a manner hath ir creafed fo much the cre of Geneve : forafmuch as it hath offered entertainment to all commers out of France and tralir, that have either forfaken, or been exiled their Countreys

for Religions fake.

Likewise, triumphs, goodly Ti umphs buildings, battels on the water fights of fword-players, hunting of wild H 4

beafts, publick shows and fights, plays solutionized with great pomp and preparation, and many other such things do draw the curious people to a cirie inspeakably, which leaves behind them much treasure, and for such cause will rather settle themselves to inhabit there, than in other places. This was also the devile of Home in her insancy to enlarge hir self.

The Causes that Concern the Magnificencie of a

To confirm a Citie in her Greatnels, fustice, Piace, and Plente are the un'oubted means: for Justice assure the every man his own Piace, cauleth all Arts and ne oriation what loever is flourish; and Plente of food and victurall, that liu aincith the life of Man with ease and much contentment. To conclude, All those things that cause the Greatnesse of a Citie, are also fit to conserve the same.



ፙጜፙፙ**ፙፙፙፙፙፙዀ**

re-

ngs

em

vill bit

was

he

is,

ch all

I.

th

n-

02

ir

Sir Walter Raleigh's Seat of

GOVERNMENT.

That the Seat of Government is uphill by the two great stillars thereof, viz. Civile Iustice, and Martia Policie, which are framed out of Husbandrie, Merchandize, and Gentry of this Kingdom.

they fay, that the goodlicft CEDARS which
grow on the high mountains of Libanus, thrust
their roots between the
clifts of hard Rocks, the better to bear
themselves against the strong storms
that blow there. As Nature hath instructed those kings of Trees, so hath
Reason taught the Kings of Men, to
root themselves in the hardie Hearts of
their faithfull Subjects. And as those
H

kings of Trees have large Tops, so have the Kings of Men large Crowns; whereof as the first would soon be broken from their bodies, were they not underborn by many b. anches, o would the other easily tytter, were they rot fastened on their heads, with the street of the soon of C vil fastice and Martial Discipling.

1. For the administration of the first, even God himself hath given direction, Judge, and Officers shall show make, which hall judge the People with

rightious jag ment.

2 The second is grounded on the first Laws of the world and nature, that Force is to be repelled by Force, Yea Mofes in the 10 of Ex dus, and elsewhere, hath delivered us many Laws & Policies of War. But as we have heard of the neglect and abuse in both , fo have we heard of the decline and ruine of many Kingdoms & States long before our days: for that Policie hath never yet prevailed (though it hath ferved for a fhort feaion) where the counterfeit hath been fold for the natural and the outward thew and formalitie for the fubstance. Of the Emperour Charls the Fourth,



0-

ot

ot

he

1-

he

.

1014

th

he

e,

e.

nd

ny

we

ofe

e-

&

at

ed

20

en

rd

œ.

h,

he

the writers of that age witness, that he used but the name of Juffice and good order, being more learned in the Law than in doing right, and that he had by far, more knowledge than confci= ence. Certainly the unjust Magistrate that fancieth to himfelt a folid and untransparable todie of Gold, every ordinarie wit can vitrifie, and make transparent pierce, and difcern their corruptions; howfoever, because not daring, they cover their knowledge, but in the mean while it is also true, That constrained diffimulation, either in the proud heart, or in the opprefled, either in publick estates, or in private perfens, where the fear of God is not prevalent, doth in all the leifure of her lunking, but tharpen her teeth. the voluntarie being no less base, than the forced malitious. Thus it fared between the Baions of England and their Kings, between the Lords of Switzer land & their people, between the Sicilians and the French between the Dolphin and John of Burgoign, between Charl, the Ninth and the French Protestants, and between Henry the third, his succession, and the Lords of Guife, hereof in place of more particulars,

lars, the whole world may ferve for

examples

It is a difficult piece of Geographie to delin ate and lay out the bounds of Authority; but it is easie enough to cocive the best use of it, and by which it hath maintained it self in lasting happines, t hath ever acquired more honour by perswading, than by beating; for as the bonds of Reason and Love are immortal, so do all other chains or cords, both rust e & rot Noble parts of their own Royaland Politick bodies.

But we will forbear for a while to firetch this first string of Ciband vil Jutice; for in respect of the first fort of Men, to wit, of those that live by their own labour, they have never been d spleased where they have been suffered to enjoy the fruit of their own travels, Meum & Tuum, Mine & Thine is all wherein they feek their certaintie & protection. True it is, that they are the Fruit-Trees of the Land, which God in Deuteronomie commanded to be spared, they gather honey, and hardly enjoy the wax, and break the ground with great labour, giving the best of their grain to the casefull & idle. For



Mr. For the fecond fort, which are the chan . Mirchants, as the first feed the Kingdome, fo do thefe enrich it, year the r trades, especially those which are forcible, are not the least part of our Martiall Palicu, as hereafter proved; and to do them right, they have in all ages and times affifted the Kings of this Land, not onely with great fums of money, but with great Fleets of Ships in all their enterprises beyond the seas, The fecond have feldome or never offended their Princes, to enjoy their trades at home upon tolerable conditions, hath ever contented them for the injuries received from other Nations, give them but the Commission of Reprifal, they will either Right themfelves, or fit down with their own leffe without complaint.

Gen. 3. The third fort, which are the 1.7. Gentrie of England, these being neither seated in the lowest grounds, and thereby subject to the biting of envery beast, nor in the highest Mountains, & thereby in danger to be torn with tempest; but the Valleys between both, have their parts in the inseriour lustice, & being spread over all, are the Garrisons of good order throughous

she Realm.

£

•

f

e

t

e



SIT WALTER RALEIGH'S LETTERS.

Sir Walter Raleigh's Letter to M' Sccretary Winwood, before his Journey to Guiana.

Honourable SIR.



Was lately perswaded, by two Gentlemen, my ancient Friends, to acquaint your Honour with some offers of mine, made here-

tofore for a Journey to Gutana, who were of opinion, That it would be better understood now, than when it was first propounded, which advice having surmounted my dispair, I have presumed to send unto your Honour the Copies of those Letters which I then wrote, both to his Majestie, and to the Treasurer Cecili, wherein as well the reasons



fons that first moved me are remembered, as the objections by him made

are briefly answered.

What I know of the riches of that place, not by hear fay, but what mine eyes hath seen, I have said it often, but it was then to no end : Because those that had the greatest trust, were resolved not to believe it, not because they doubted the Truth, but because they doubted my Disposition towards themselves; where (if God had bleffed me in the enterprise) I had recovered his Majetties favour and good opinion. Other cause than this, or other furpition they never had any. Our late worthy Prince of Wales was extream curious in fearching out the Nature of my oftences, The Queens Maj flie hath informed her self from the beginning. The King of Denmark at both times of his being here was throughly fatisfied of my innocencie, they would otherwise never have moved his Majestie on my behalf.

The Wife, the Brother, and the Son of a King, do not use to sue for men suspect; but Sir, fince they all have done it out of their charities.

and

and but with references to me alone. Your Honour (whose respect hath onely relation to his Majesties service) strengthened by the example of those Princes, may with the more hardnesse do the like, being Princes to whom his Majesties good estate is no lette dear; and all men that shall oppugne it, no lesse hatefull, then to the King himself.

It is true Sir, That his Majeftie hath fometimes answered, That his Councel knew me better than he did; mea: ning some two or three of them, And it was indeed my infelicitie; for had his Majestie known me, I had never been here where I now am: or had I known his Majestie, they had never been fo long there where they now are, His Majestie not knowing of me bath been my ruine, and his Majeftie mifknowing of them, hath been the ruine of a goodly part of his efface; but they are allof them now, some living and fome dying, come to his Majesties knowledge. But Sir, how little foever his Majeffie knew me, and how much foever he believed them, yet have I been bound to his Majestie both for my Life, and all that remains, of which, bur



but for his Majestie, nor Life, nor ought else had remained. In this respect Sir, I am bound to yield up the same life, and all I have for his Majesties service; to die for the King, and not by the King, is all the ambition I have in the world.

Walter Raleigh.

Sir Walter Raleigh's Letter to bis Wife, from Guiana.

Sweet Heart,

e -) ce u ce

Can yet write unto you but with a weak hand, for I have suffered the most violent Calenture for fifteen days, that ever man did, and lived: but God that gave me a frong heart in all my advertities, hath also now strengthened it in the hell fire of heat.

We have had two most grievous sicknesses in our Ship, of which sourcie two have died, and there are yet many sick, but having recovered the land of Guidan, this is of November, I hope we shall recover them. We are yet two hun-



hundred men, and the rest of our Fleet are rea onable strong, strong enough I hope to perform what we have undertaken, if the diligent care at Londor, to make our strength known to the Spanish King by his Ambassadour, have not taught the Spanish King to fortise all the enterances against us; howsoever we must make the adventure, and if we perish, it shall be no honour for England, nor gain for his Majestie to loose among many other, an hundred as valiant Gentlemen as England bath in it.

Of Capta'n Bajues base coming from us at the Canaries, see a Letter of Kemishes to M' cory, & of the unnatural weather, storms & rains and winds. He hath in the same letter, given a touch of the way that hath ever been sailed in sourteen days, now hardly performed in sourtie days; God I trust, will give us comfort in that which is

to come.

In passage to the Canaries, I stayed at Gomerah, where I took water in peace, because the Countrey durst not denie it me; I received there of an English race, a Present of Oranges, Lemmons, Quinces, & Pome-granates with:



put

c

n

h

out which I could not have lived; those I preserved in sresh sands, and I have of them yet to my great refreshing. Your son had never so good health, having no distemper in all the heat under the Line. All my servants have escaped but Crab and my Cook, yet all have had the sickness. Crosts and March, and the rest are all well. Remember my service to my Lord Caren, and Mr Secretarie Winwood.

I write not to them for I can write of nought but miferies : yet of men of fort, we have loft our Serjeant Major, Captain Pigott, and his Lieuetenant, Captain Edward Hastings, who would have died at home for both his liver. folcen, and brains were rotten. My fons Lieuetenant Payton and my cofin Mr. Hews, Mr. Mo'daut, Mr. Gardiner, Mr. Heyward, Captain Fennings the Merchant, Kemish of London, and the Master Chyrurgion, Mr. Refiner, Mr. Moor the Governour of the Barmoudas, our Provost Marsh, W. Steed, Lieutenant Vefcie, but to mine inestimable grief, Hammon and Talb t. By the next I truft you shall hear better of us, in Gods hands



hands we were, and in him we truft,
This bearer, Captain Aller, for his
infi mitie of his head I have fent back,
an honest valiant man, he can deliver
you all that is past. Commend me to
my worthy friends at Loubburr, Se
John Leigh and Mr. Bowr, whose Nephew Kneun is well, and to my com
Blundel', and my most devoted and
humble fervice to her Majestie.

To tell you that I might be here King of the Indian, were a vanitie, but my name hath fill lived among them; here they feed me with fresh mean, and all that the Country yields, all offer to obey me. Commend me to post

Carew my fon.

From Galliana in Guiana, the 14 of

Sir Walter Raleigh's Letter to Sir Ralph Winwood.

SIR,

As I have not hitherto given you and ny Account of our proceedings and passages towards the Inde, so have I no other subject to write of, than of the



er do

e It

4

Letters. the greatest misfortunes that ever befell any man: for whereas, for the firft, All those that Navigate be ween Gape de Verd and Ameria, do paffe between fifteen or twentie days at moft, we found the wind fo contrary, and which are also contrary to nature so many ftorms and rains, as we fpent fx weeks in the passage, by reason whereof, and that in fo great heat we wanted water : for at the Iffe Prano of Cape de vere, we loft our Anchours and Cables, and our water Casks, being driven from the Island with a Huluane, and were like all to have perished. Great ficknefle fell among it us, and carried away great numbers of our ablest men both for lea and land. The 17 of November, we had fight of Gurina, and foon after came to Anchour in five degrees at the River Galliane, here we flaid till the fourth of Derember, landed our fick men, fer up the Barges and Shallops, which were brought out of England in quarters, washed our Ships, and took in tresh water, being fed and cherished by the Indians of my old acquaintance, with a great deal of love and respect, my selfbeing in the hands

of death these weeks, and was not a-

ble

166

able otherwife to move than as I was carried in a chair, gave order to s fmall Ships, to fail into grineque, having Capta'n Kemis for their Conductor towards the Mynes, and in those five Ships five Companies of 50 under the command of Captain Parher, and Captain North, brethren to the Lord Mounteagle and the Lord Worth, valiant Gentlemen, and of infinite patience for the labour, hunger, and heat which they have endured, my fon had the third Company Captain Thornix of Kens the fourth Company, Captain (hidley, by his Lieutenant, the fifth : but as my Sergeant Major Captain Piggot of the Low Countrys died in the former miserable passage, To my Lieutenant Sir Warham S. Leiser lay fick without hope of life, and the charge conferred on my Nephew George Raleigh, who had also ferved long with infinite commendations; but by reason of my absence, and of Sir Warhams was not to well obeyed as the Enterprize required. As they paffed up the River, the Spaniard began the War, and thot at us both with their Ordinance and Muskets, whereupon the Companies for-

A

ic-

forced to charge them, and foon after beat them out of the Town. In the allault, my fon (more defirous of honour than fafetie) was flain, with whom (to fay truth) all the respects of this world have taken end in me. And although these five Captains had as weak Companies as ever followed valiant Leaders, yet were there amongst them some twentie or thirt'e valiant adventurous Gentlemen, and of fingular courage, as of my fons Companie, Mr. Knivet, Mr. Hammon, Mr. Langworth, Mr. tohn Pleafington 3 his Officers, Sir John Handen; Mr. S,mon Leak Corporall of the Field. Mr Hammon the elder Brother, Mr. Nicholas of Backingbam, Mr. hoberts of Kent, Mr. Perin, Mr. Trefham, Mr. Mullinax, Mr. Winter and his brother, Mr. Wray, Mr. Miles Herbart, Mr. Bradshave, Capt. Hill, and others,

on-

in

50

10

rd

in-

er,

my

in

ıy,

nt,

or

35

e,

w

ot day

Sir, I have fer down the names of these Gentlemen, to the end, that is his Majestie shall have cause to use their service, it may please you to take notice of them for very sufficient Gentlemen. The other five Ships staid at Trinidado, having no other Port capable for them near Guiano. The

to

m

be

29.

B

h

W

n

rc

n

d

YF

th

fo

S

fo

ir

t

P

0

168 .

fecond Sh p was commanded by my Vice Admirall Capt. Job : Pa mangion, of whom (to do him right) he is one of the fufficientest Gentlemen for the Sea that England hach. The third by Sir Warbam S. Leiger, an exceeding valiant and worthy Gentleman. The fourth by Se Fohn Fern The fifth by Caprain Chidley of Deven, With these five Ships I daily accended their seman do of Spain, which had they fer upon us, our force divided, the one half in Oringue, an hundred and fiftie miles from us, we had not onely been torn in pieces, but all those in the River had also perished, being of no force at all for the Sea. fight; for we had refolved to have been burnt by their fides, had the Armado arrived : but belike, they faid for us ar Margarit by which they knew we must passe towards the indies! for it pleased his Majestie to value us at fo little, as to command me upon my Alleageance, to fee down under my hand the Countrey, and the River by which I was to enter it; to fet down the number of my men, and burthen of my Ships, and what Ordinance ever ry Ship carried, which being known to the Spin fb Amballadour, and by him



the

to the King of Spain, a dispatch was made, and letters fent from Madrid, before my departure out of the Thames; for his first letter fent by a Barque of Advile, was dated the 19 of March 1617, at Madrid, which letter I have here inclosed fent to your Honour, the rest I reserve, not knowing whether they may be intercepted or not. The second by the King, dated the second of May, Sent also by a Coronel of Diego de Polonieque, Governour of Guiane, Elderedo, and Trinidado. The third by the Bishop of Poresicho, and delivered to Polonique the 15 of July, at Trinidade, And the fourth was fent from the Farmer and Secretary of his Customs in the Indies. At the same time, by that of the Kings hand, fent by the Bishop, there was alfo a Commission for the speedie levying of three hundred fouldiers, and ten pieces of Ordinance to be fent fr o Portricho, for the defence of Guiana, an hundred & fiftie from Nuevo Kemo de Grando, under the command of Captain an bony Mufica, and the other hundred and fiftie from Portriche, to be conducted by C. Franc, Laudio. Now Sir, if all that have traded to

or yes ye in no mandlidd y y is an y y na Toom

the Indies fince his Majesties time knew that the Spaniards have flayed alive all the poor men which they have taken, being but Merchant men, what death and cruel torment shall we expect if they conquer us? certainly they have hither to failed grossly, being fet out thence as we were, both for

1

Sa

Pir

it

g

F

fe

of

w

th

L

47

bo

Br

do

Pr

Bo

Ir

-11

St

GI

number, time, and place.

Lastly, to make an Apologie for not working the Myne, (a'though' know his Majestie expects) whom I am to satisfie so much, as my self, having lost my son, and my estate in the Enterprise, yet it is true, that the Spaniards took more care to defend the passage leading unto it, than they did the Town, which by the Kings instruction they might easily do, the Country being Appea & Nemosa.

But it is true, that when Capt. Kemish found the River low, and that he
could not approach the Banks in must
places near the Myne by a Mile, and
where he found a differnt, a volley of
Muskets come from the woods upon
the Boat, and slew two Rowers,
and hurt fix others, and shot a valiant Gentleman of Captain Thornis,
of which wound he languisheth to



nly

ing

n for

for

gh I

am

En-

mir pulche

tiós

Ke

nuft

and

of pon rs, aliiz,

this day. He, to wit, Kim fb, following his own advice, thought that it was in vain to discover the Myne; for he gave me this for an excuse at his return, that the Companies of English in the Town of S. Thome were not able to defend it, against the daily and nightly affaults of the Spaniards, that the paflages to the Mynes, were thick and unpaffable woods, and that the Myric being discovered, they had no men to work it, did not discover it at all: for it is true, the Spaniards having two gold Mynes near the Town, the one possessed by Pedro Rodrigo de Paran, the second by Harmian Frotinio, the third of filver, by Captain Francisco, for the want of Negroes to work them : for as the Indians cannot be confirmined by a Law of Charls the Fifth, fo the Spaniards will not, nor can endure the labour of those Mynes, whatfoever the Bragadochio, the Spanish Ambastador faith. I shall prove under the Proprietors hand, by the Custom-Book, and the Kings Quinto, of which I recovered an Ingot or two: I shall allo make it appear to any Prince or State that will undertake it, how eafily those Mynes, and five or fix more

V

ŀ

b

r

u

172

of them may be poffeffed, and the most of them in those parts, which never have as yer been attempted by any, nor by any paffage to them, nor ever difevered by the English, French, or Dutch. But at Kemifb his return from Or moque, when I rejected his counsel and his courfe, and told him that he had undone me; and wounded my credit with the King past recovery, he slew himself for I told him, that feeing my fon was flain, I cared not if I had loft an hum dred more in opening of the Myne, fo my credit had been faved: for I proteft before God, had not Capt. Whiney (to whom I gave more countenance than to all the aptains of my Fleet) run from me at the Granadoes, and carried another thip with him of Captain Wallestons, I would have left my body at S. Thomes by my fons, or have brought with me out of that or other Mynes, so much Gold oar, as should have latisfied the King. I propounded no vain thing; what shall become of me I know not, I am unpardoned in England, and my poor estate consumed, and whether any Prince will give me bread or no I know not, I defire your Honour to hold me in your good opinino, to remember my fervice to my L ore



molt

nor feo-

itch.

que,

his

etnwith

felf:

was

un-

ceft

et)

rain

ody

her

uld

ded

d

in

ed,

me our nimy

010

Lord of Ayundel and Pembrook, to take some pity on my poor Wife, to whom I dare not write for renewing her forrow for her fon; and befeech you to give a copie of this to my Lord Cien; for to a broken mind, a fick bodie, and weak eyes, it is a torment to write many Letters. I have found many things of importance for discovering the state and weaknesse of the Indies, which if I live, I shall bereaster impart unto your Honour, to whom I shall remain a faithfull servant.

Walter Raleigh

Sir Walter Raleigh's Letter sent to his Wife, Copied out of his own hand writing.

I Was loath to write, because I know not how to comfort you, and God knows, I never knew what forrow meant till now. All that I can say to you is, that you must obey the will and providence of God, and remember, that the Queens Majestie bare the lost of Prince Heary with a magnanimous last



Sir Walter Raleigh's 174 beart, and the Ladie Harrington of her fon. Comfort your heart (deareft Befs) I shall forrow for us both, I shall for wow the leffe, because I have not long to forrow, because not long to live. I refer you to Mr. Secretarie Winwoods Letter, who will give you a copie of it, if you fend for it, therein you shall know what hath passed; I have written that Letter, for my brains are broken, and it is a torment for me to write, and especially of misery. I have defired Mr. Secretarie to give my Lord carem a copie of his Letter, I have clenfed my ship of sick men, and fent them home; I hope God will fend us fomewhat before we teturn. You shall hear from the if I live, from the New found land, where I mean to make clean my thips and revictual; for I have Tobacco enough to pay for it. The Lord bleffe and comfort you, that you may bear patiently the death of your valiant fon

it

n

This 22. of March, from the Ift of Christophers, yours Walter Raleigh.

Post-fcript.

Protest before the Majestie of God, That as Sir Francis Drate, and



(s)

10

ng I

it, all it-

I dd du e o ;

and Sir John Hawkins died heart broken when they failed of their enterprife, I could willingly do the like, did I not contend against forrow for your fake, in hope to provide somewhat for you and to comfort and relieve you. If I live to return, refolve your felf that it is the care for you that hath strengthened my heart. It is true that Kemifb might have gone directly to the Myne, and meant it, but after my fons death, he made them believe he knew not the way, and excused himself upon want of water in the River, and counterfeiting many impediments left it unfound. When he came back, I told him he had undone me, and that my credit was loft for ever; he answe-That when my fon was loft, and that he left me fo weak, that he resolved not to find me alive, he had no reason to enrich a companie of Rascals, who after my sons death made no account of him. He further told me that the English sent up into Guiana, could hardly defend the Spanish town of S. Thome which they had taken, and therefore for them to passe through thick woods it was impossible, and more impossible to have victuall brought them

them into the Mountains And it is true, that the Governour Diego Polenego, and other four Captains being flain, whereof Was: flew one, Pleffington, Was fervant, and John of Moroc. ors, one of his men, flew other two. I fay five of them flain in the enterance of the Town, the rest went off in a whole bodie, and took more care to defend the passages to their Mynes (of which they had three within a League of the Town, besides a Myne that was about five miles off) than they did of the Town it felf. Yet Kemifh at the firft was refolved to go to the Myne; but when he came to the banck-fide to Land, and had two of his men flain outright from the bank, and fix other hurt, and Caprain Thorn & fhor in the head, of which wound, and the accident thereof, be hath pined away these twelve weeks.

Now when Kemish came back and gave me the former Reasons which moved him not to open the Myne, the one the death of my son, a second the weaknesse of the English, and their impossibilities to work and to be victualled; a th rd that it were a folly to discover it for the Spaniards; and lastly my weaknesse and being unpardoned;



and that I rejected all these his Arguments, and told him, that I must leave him to himfelf to refolve it to the King and State, he thut up himfelf into his Cabbin, and shot himself with a pocket Pistol which broke one of, his ribs, and finding that he had not prevailed, he thrust a long Knife under his short ribs up to the handle and died. Thus much I have written to Mr Secretarie, to whole Letters I refer you to know the truth. I did after the sealing break open the Letter again, to let you know in brief the state of that business, which I pray you impart to my Lord of Northumberland, and Silvanus Sco-Yy.

e,de-

ed

For the rest, there was never poor man so exposed to slaughter as I was; for being commanded upon mine Alleagiance to set down not onely the Coutrey butthe very River by which I was to enter it, to name my Ships number, men, and my Artillerie. This now was sent by the Spanish Ambassador to his Master the King of Spain, the King wrote his Letters to all patts of the Indies, especially to the Governour Palamago of Guana, Elderado, and Trinidado, of which the

Is firft



fift Letter bore date To of March 16 17, at Maarill, when I had not yet left the Thames, which Letter I have fent to Mr Secretarie. I have also other Letters of the Kings which I referve, and one of the Councels. The King al. to fent a Commission to leave three hundred fouldiers out of his Garrisons of unie Regno de Granado è Portricho. with ten pieces of brafle Ordinance to entertain us; he also prepared an Ar. my by fea to fet upon us. It were too long to tell you how we were preferved, if I live I shall make it known; my brains are broken, and I cannot write much, I live yet, and I to'd you why, witney for whom I fold all my Plate at Plymouth, and to whom I gave more credit and countenance than to all the Captains of my Fleet, ran from me at the Granadoes, and Wolleston with him, fo as I have now but five Ships, and out of those I have fent some into my Fly boat, a rabble of idle Rascals, which I know will not spare to wound me, but I care not. am fure there is never a bafe flave in all the Fleet hath taken the pain and care that I have done, that have flept fo little, and travelled fo much, my friends



179

friends will not believe them, and for the rest I care not; God in heaven blesse you and strengthen your heart.

Yours

Walter Ralligh.

Sir Walter Raleigh's Letter to Mr Sceretary Winwood.

SIR;

Since the death of Kemilb, it is confessed by the Serjeant Major, and others of his inward friends, that he told them that he could have brought them unto the Myne within two hours March from the River side; but because my son was slain, my telf unpardoned, and not like to lve, he had no reason to open the Myne either for the Spaniard or for the King; they answered, that the King (though liwere not pardoned) had granted my heart under the Great Seal. He replyed, that the grant to me was to so man, non Ent.

Ens in the Law, and therefore of no force; this discourse they had, which I knew not of till after his death : but when I was resolved to write unto your Honour, he prayed me to joyn with him in excusing his not going to the Myne, I answered him I would not do it; but if my self could satisfie the King and State, that he had reason not to open it, I should be glad of it: but for my part, I must avow that he knew it, and that he might with loss have done it; other excuses I would not frame ; he told me that he would wait on me presently, and give me better fatisfaction : but I was no sooner come from him into my Cabbin, but I heard a Piftol go over my head, and fending to know who shot it, word was brought me that Kemil fhot it out of his Cabbin window to cleanfe it; his boy going into his Cabbin, found him lying upon his bed with much bloud by him, and looking in his face faw him dead; the Pistol being but little, did but crack his rib, but turming him over found a long Knife in his bodie, all but the handle. Sir I have fent into England with my cofin Marbert (a very valiant honest Gentleman)

man) divers unworthy persons, good for nothing neither by fea nor land. and though it was at their own fuit, yet I know they will wrong me in all that they can. I befeech your Honour, that the fcorn of men may not be believed of me, who have taken more pains, and fuffered more than the meanest Rascall in the Ship; these being gone, I shall be able to keep the sea untill the end of August, with some four reasonable good thips. Sir, wherefoever God that! permit me to arrive in any part of Europe, I will not fail to let your Honour know what we have done, till then, and ever Ireft

Your Honours

fervant

W. Rakigh.





Sir WALTER RALEIGH'S

Letter to

King JAMES, at his return from GUIANA.

May it please your most excellent Majestie,

I Fin my Journey outward bound, I had my men murthered at the Islands, & yet spared to take revenge, if I did discharge some Spanish Barks taken without spoil, if I to bear all parts of the Spanish Indies, wherein I might have taken twentie of their Downs on the fea coafts, and did onely follow the enterprize I undertook for Guiana, where without any direaions from me, a Spanish Village was burnt, which was new fet up within three miles of the Myne. By your Matesties favour, I find no reason why the Spanish Ambassador should complain of me. If it were lawfull for the Spaniards to murther twentie fix English



glish men, tying them back to back, and then cutting their throats, when they had traded with them a whole moneth, and came to them on the land without so much as one sword, and that it may not be lawfull for your Majeflies subjects, being charged first by them, to repell force by force, we may justly say, O miserable Engish!

It Ptiker and Methim took Campeach and other places in the Honduries, feated in the heart of the Spanish Incies, burnt Towns, and killed the Spaniards, and had nothing faid unto them at their return, and my self forbore to look into the Indies; because I would not offend, I may as justly say, O miserable Sir Watter Rateigh!

It I have spent my poor estate, lost my soa, suffered by sicknesse and otherwise a world of maseries; if I have resisted with maniscal hazard of my life, the Robberies and Spoils, with which my Companions would have made me rich, if when I was poor, I would have made my self-rich, if when I have gotten my liberty, which all men and nature it self do much prize, I voluntarily lost it, it when I was sure of my life, I rendered it again, if I might elsewhere



where have fold my ship and goods, and put five or six thousand pounds in my purse, and yet brought her into England, I besech your Majestie to believe, that all this I have done, because it should not be said to your Majestie that your Majestie had given libertie and trust to a man whose end was but the recoverie of his libertie, and who had betrayed your Majesties trust.

My Mutiniers told me, that if I returned from England I should be undone, but I believed in your Majesties goodnesse more than in all their arguments. Sure, I am the first that being free and able to enrich my self; yet hath embraced povertie and perill. And as sure I am, that my example shall make me the last: but your Majesties wisdom and goodnesse I have made my judges, who have ever been, and shall ever be.

Your Majefties most humble Vasfal

watter Raleigh.



Sir Walter Raleighs's Letier to his Wife, after his Condemna-

You shall receive (my dear Wife) my Last words in these my Last lines; my love I send you, that you may keep when I am dead, and my countell, that you may remember it when I am no more. I would not with my will present you forrows (dear Bets) let them go to the grave with me, and be buried in the dust. And seing that it not the will of God that I shall see you any more, bear my destruction patiently, and with an heart like your self.

First I send you all the thanks which my heart can conceive, or my words expresse, for your many travels and cares for me, which though they have not taken effect as you wished, yet my debt to you is not the lesse; but pay it I ne-

ver shall in this world.

Secondly, I befeech you for the love you bare me living, that you do not hide your felf many days, but by your travels feek to help my miferable Fortunes, and the Right of your poor Child.

Child, your mourning cannot avait me

that am but duft.

Thirdly, you shall understand, that my Lands were conveyed (bons fide) to my Child, the writings were drawn at Midfummer was twelve moneths, as divers can witneffe, and I truft my bloud will quench their malice who defired my flaughter, that they will not feek also to kill you and yours with extream poverty. To what friend to direct you I know not, for all mine have left me in the true time of triall. Most forrie am I, that being thus furprised by death, I can leave you no better Estate, God hath prevented all my determinations, that great God which wo:keth all in all, and if you can live free from want, care for no more, for the rest is but a vanitie: Love God, and begin bet mes, in him you shall find true, everlasting, and endlesse comfort. when you have travelled and wearied your felf with all forts of worldly cogitations, you shall fit down by forrow in the end Teach your fon also to serve and fear God whileft he is young, that the fear of God may grow up in him; then will God be an Hulband to you, and

and a Father to him, an Husband and a Father, that can never be taken from

you.

Baylie oweth me a thousand pounds, and Arran fix hundred; in firmefey alfo I have much owing me. (Dear wife) I bescech you, for my Souls fake, pay all poor men. When I am dead, no. doubt you shall be much fought unto for the world thinks I was very rich; bave a care to the fair pretences of men, for no greater miferie can befall you in this life, than to become a prey unto the world, and after to be despised. I speak (God knows) not to diffwade you from Marriage, for it will be best for you, both in refpect of God and the world, As for me, I am no more yours, nor you mine, death hath cut us afunder, and God hath divided me from the world, and you from me. Remember your poor Child for his Fathers fake, who loved you in his happiest estare. I sued for my life, but (God knows)it was for you and yours that I defired it: for, know it, (my dear Wife) your Child is the (hild of a true man, who in his own respect despiseth 'Death and his mishapen and ugly forms. I cannot write much.

much, (God knows) how hardly I feal this time when all fleep, and it is alfo time for me to separate my thoughts from the world. Beg my dead body, which living was denied you, and either lay it in Sh birn or in Exceter Church by my father and mother. I can fay no more, Time and Death cal-leth me away. The everlasting God, powerfull, infinite, and inscrutable God Almightie, who is goodnesse it felf, the true Light and Life, keep you and yours, and have mercy upon me. and forgive my Perfecutors and falle accusers, and fend us to meet in his glorious kingdom. My dear Wife farewell, Bleffe my Boy, Pray for me, and let my true God hold you both in his Arms.

Yours that was, but

now not mine own

Walter Ra eigh.

Sir Walter Rakigh's Letter to Prince Henry, touching the model of a Ship.

Moft excellent Prince,

If the Ship your Highness intends to build, be bigger than the Victorie, then her beams, which are laid overthwart from side to side will not serve again, and many other of her timbers and other stuff, will not serve, whereas if she be a size less, the timber of the old Ship will serve well to the building of a new.

If the be bigger the will be of lefs use, go very deep to water, and of mightie charge, our Channels decaying every year, less nimble, less mannyable, and seldom to be used Grande Navio grande fatica saith the Spa-

niard.

A Ship of fix hundred Tuns, will carrie as good Ordinance as a Ship of twelve hundred Tuns, and where the greater hath double her Ordinance, the less will turn her broad fide twice, before the great Ship can wind once,

once, and so no advantage in that overplus of Guns. The leffer will go over clear where the greater shall stick and perish; the lesser will come and go, leave or take, and is yare, whereas the greater is flow, unmanyable, and ever full of encumber.

In a well conditioned Ship, these

things are chiefly required.

1. That the be ftrong built.

2. Swift in fail.

3: Stout-fided.

4. That her Ports be so laid, as that she may carry out her Guns all weathers.

5. That she hull and trie well.

6. That the flay well, when board-

To make her strong, consisted in the care and truth of the wo k-man; to make her swife, is to give her a large Run, or way forward, and so afterward, done by art and just proportion, and that in laying out of her bowes before, and quarters behind; the Shipwright be sure, that she neither fink nor hang into the water, but he clear and a ove it, whorein Ship-wrights do often fail, and then is the speed in failing utterly spoiled.

That

T-

cr

nd

0,

he

er

ſe

ls 11 That she be stout-sided, the same is provided by a long bearing floar, and by sharing off from above waters to the lower edge of the Ports, which done; then will she carry out her Ordinance all weathers.

To make her to hull and to trie well, which is called a good fea Ship, there are two things principally to be regarded, the one that the have a good draught of water, the other that the be not overcharged: And this is foldom done in the Kings Ships, and therefore we are forced to lye, or trie in them with our mainCourfe and mizen, which with a deep keel and standing streak, the would perform.

The extream length of a Ship makes her unapt to ftay, especially if she be floatie and want sharpnesse of way forward. And it is most true, that such over-long Ships, are fitter for the narrow Seas in summer, than for the Ocean, or long voyages: and therefore an hundred foot by the Keel, and thirtie five foot broad is a good proportion for a great Ship.

It is to be noted, that all Ships sharp before, not having a long floar, will fall rough into the sea from a bil-

billow, and take in water over head and ears; and the fame quality have all narrow-quartered thips to fink after the tail. The high Charging of th ps. is that that brings many ill qualities, it makes them extream Lee-ward, makes them fink deep into the feas, makes them labour fore in foul weather, and oft-times overfer. Safety is more to be respected than shews, or nicenesse for eale; in sea journeys both cannot well stand together, and therefore the most

necessary is to be chosen.

Two Decks and an half is enough, and no building at all above that, but a low Mafters Cabb n. Our Mafters and Mariners will fay, that the ships will bear more well enough ; and true it is, if none but ordinary Mariners ferved in them. But men of better fort, unused to fich a life, cannot so well endure the rowling and tumbling from fide to fide, where the leas are never fo little frown, which comes by high Charging Besides those high Cabbin works aloft, are very dangerous in fight, to tear men with their fplinters.

Above all other things, have care that the great Guns be four foot clear above water when all lading is in, or else these best pieces are idle at sea: for if the Ports lie lower, and be open it is dangerous; and by that default was a goodly Ship, and many gallant Gentlemen lost, in the days of Henry the Eigth, before the Isle of wight, in a Ship called by the name of Mary-Rose.

No other Balm will there be an

er s,

iţ

es es

d

oc

N U

A

at

rs se is sul B- yh

Find Ray soul, like a quer Print Travellech rewards the Land order so Over the filter Mountains

Volume to the side Notes and State of the State of

And reflect Median Sir West Median Sir Where directing

When e focused and property of the series of

Sir Walter Raleighs wair

PILGRIMAGE Give me my Scallop shell of Quiet. My Staff of Faith to walk upon ; My Scrip of Joy immortall Diet; My Bottle of Salvation. My Gown of Gloric (Hopes true gage) And thus Ile take my Pilgrimage. Bloud must be my Bodies onelyBalmer, No other Balm will there be given Whil'ft my Soul, like a quiet Palmer, Travelieth towards the Land of Heaven Over the filver Mountains Where springs the Nectar Fountains, There I will kiffe the Bowl of Bliffe, And drink mine everlasting fill Upon every Milken hill. My Soul will be a drie before, But after, it will thirst no more. He take them first to quench my Thirk,

And tafl of Nectars fuckets,
At those clear Wells
Where sweetnesse dwells,
Drawn up by Saints in Chrysta Buckets.
Then by that happy bleftfull day,
More peacefull Pilgrims I shall see,
That have cast off their rags of clay,
And walk apparelled fresh like me,
And when our Boules and all we
Are fill'd with immortalitie.

The

Sir Walter Raleigh's Verfes Then the bleffed Parts wee'l travell, Strow'd with Rubies thick as gravell, Scalings of Diamonds, Saphire flowers, High walls of Coral, and Pearly Bowers. From thence to Heavens bribeles Hall, Where no corrupted voices brawl, No Conscience molten into Gold, No forg'd Accuser bought or fold, No cause deferr'd, no vain-spentlourny, For there, CHRIST is the Kings Actorney; Who pleads for all without degrees, And he hath Angels, but no Fees: And when the twelveGrand-millionIury Of our Sins, with direfull furie, 'Gainst our Souls black Verdicts give, Christ pleads his Death, & then we Live. Be thou my Speaker [taintless Pleadet, Unblotted Lawyer, true Proceeder.] Thou would'ff Salvation even for Alms, Not with a bribed Lawyers Palms. And this is mine evernal! Plea To him that madeHeaven, Earth &Sea, That fince my Flesh must die so soon, And want a Head to dine next noon, Iuft ar the ftroak, when my Veins ftart & fpread,

ge)

mer,

mer,

a ven

is,

e,

y,

Then am I ready, like a Palmer fit (writ. To tread those ble st Paths which before I Of Death & Juigement, Heaven & Hell, Who oft doth think, must needs Die web.

Sir Waher Rateigh's

VERSES;

Found in his Bible in the Gue-bonse at West-

F Ven such is Time, which takes in trust.
Our Youth, our loys, and all we have,
And pays us nought but Age and Dust,
When in the dark and silent Grave:
When we have wandred all our ways,
Shuts up the storie of our days:
And from which Grave, & Earth, & Dust,
The Lord shall raise me up I trust.

On the Snuff of a Candle
The night before he died.

Cowards fear to Die, but Courage frout, Rather than Live in Snuff, wil be put out. Sir



Sir WALTER RALEIGH'S

SPEECH

Immediately before be

Pon Simon and Judes day the Lieutenant of the Tower had a Warrane to bring his Pritoner to the Kings Ben bin W minfler-Hall, where the Actor ey Generall demanded Ex cuelon according to the ludgement pronous ced againft ham at Washelier, the Lord Chief luftice caused the Indiament, Verdict, and long ment to be read, and after asked him, what he could fay, Why be thould not die accord ngto the Law; his answer was, That this fitteen years he had lived by the meer mercy of the King, and did now wonder how his Mercy was curried into luftice, he not knowing any thing wherein he had provoked his Majo-Ries

Ries displeasure, and did hope, that he was clear from that Iudgement by the Kings Commission in making him Generall of the Voyage to Guiana, for (as he conceived) the words, To his trusty and well beloved subject, &c. Did in themselves imply a Pardon, But Master Attorney told him, these words were not sufficient for that purpose. Whereupon he desired the opinion of the Court, to which the Lord Chief Iustice replied, it was no Pardon in Law.

Then began Sir Walter Raleigh to make a long description of the events and ends of his Voyage, but he was interrupted by the Chief luftice, who told him, that it was not for any offence committed there, but for his first fact that he was now called in question, and thereupon told him, That feeing he must prepare to die, he would not add affliction to affliction, nor aggravate his fault, knowing him to be a man full of mifery; but with the good Samaricane administer oyl and wine for the comfort of his diffrested Soul. You have been a Generall, and a great Commander, im tate therefore that noble Captain, who thrusting himself

in-

into the middest. of a Battell, cried a-loud, Mors me Expest it, & ego Mortem Expestabo, as you should not contemn so to do, nor should you fear death, the one sheweth too much boldnesse, the other no lesse cowardize, so with some other few instructions the Court arose, and Sir Walter was committed into the hands of the Sherist of Middlesex, who presently conveyed him to the Gare-house in Westminster.

ie

r

4-

n

S

Upon Thursday morning this Couragious, although Committed Knight, was brought before the Parliamenthouse, where there was a Scaffold cre-Red for his Beheading: yet it was doubted over night that he should be hanged, but it fell out otherwise. He had no sooner mounted the scaffold, but with a chearfull Countenance, and undaunted Look, he saluted the Companie. His Attire was a wrought Night-cap, a Ruff band, a hair-coloured Sattin Doublet, with a black wrought Watte-coat under it, a pair of black cut Taffery Breeches, a pair of ath-coloured Silk Stockings, & a wrought black Velvet Night gown; putting off his Hat, he directed his Speech to the Lords present, as followeth.

4

Alt-

My honourable Lords, and thereft of my good friends that come to see me die, Know, that I much rejoyce that it hath pleased God to bring me from darknesse to ught, and in freeing me from the Tower, wherein I might have died in disgrace, by letting me live to come to this place, where though I lose my life, yet I shall to my charge, and leave behind me a testimony of a true heart, both to my King and Country.

Two thongs Two things there are which So W. Ris have exceedingly poset and leigh accus provoked his Majeffics indigfea of. nation againft me, viz. A Confederacie, or Combination with France, and disloyall and disobedient words of my Prince. For the first, bis Maj flie had fome canfe, bough grownded upon a weak foundation, to sufpett mive inclination to the French action, for not long before my departure from England, the French Agent wok occasion, paffing by my house, to visit me, had some conscrence, during the time of bis abode, onely concerning my voyage, and nothing elfe, I take God to with fe.

Another suspicion is had of me, because I did labour to make anticape from PlyPlymouth to France, I cannot deny, but that willingly, when I heard a rumour, I hat there was no hope of my Life upon my return to London, I would have en leaped for the safeguard of my Life, and not for any ill intens or confourait against the State.

die,

ath e to

per,

ice,

2000

all

aid

16-

ing

ch

nd

5-

A

nt

is

10-

4

The like reason of suspition arose, in that I persuaded Sir Lewis Steukly, my Guardian, to she with me from London to France, but my answer to this is, as to the other, That one y for my safeguard, and nought ele, was my intent, as I shall answer before the Aimighie.

It is alleadeed, That I feegred my felf fick, and by art made mi body full of blifeers when I was at Salibury. True it
is, I did to; the reason was, because I boped thereb to defer my coming before the King and Councell, and so by delaying, might have goined time to have got my Pardon. I have an Example out of Scripture for my warrant, that in case of metistry, and for the safeguard of my life, David seigned himself soolish and mad, yet it was not imputed to him for sin.

Concerning the fection Imputation laid to my charge, that I should speak feander loss and reprochfull words of my Prince, there is no witnesse against me but onely

one,

202 Sir Walter Raleigh's Speech.

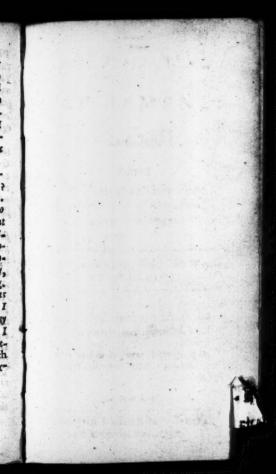
one, and he a Chimicall French man, whom I entertained, rather for his felts than his Judgement: this man to increase himself into the favour of the Lirds, and gaping after some great reward, hath falsely accused me of Seditions, speeches against his Majestie; against whom, if I did either speak, or think a thought hurtfull or prejudicial, the Lord blot me out of the book of Life.

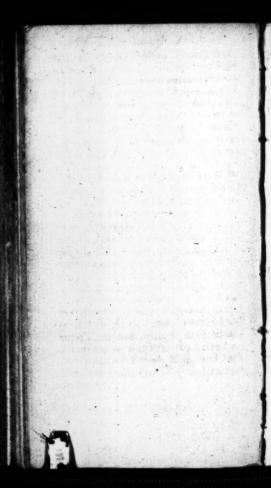
It is not a time to flatter or fear Princes, for I am a subject to none but Death; therefore have a charitable conceit of mc. That I know to swear is an offence, to swear fally at any time is a great fin, but to swear falle before the presence of Almightie God, before whom I am forthwith to appear, were an offence unpardonable; therefore think me not now rashly, or untruly to confirm, or protest any thing.

As for other objections, in that I was brought perforce into England, that I carried fixteen thousand pounds in mong out of England with me, more than I I made known, that I should receive Letters from the French King, and such like, with many Protestations he utterly denied.

FINIS.







The PREROGATIVE OF PARLIAMENTS

In ENGLAND.

Proved

In a Dialogue between a Counfellour of State, and a Iustice of Peace.

Written by the worthy Knight. Sit WAL-

Dedicated to that part of the Parliament now affembled.

Preferred to be now happily (in these distracted Times) Published.

LONDON,

Printed for William Sheares Innier , in Westminster Hall. 1657.

OF THE COURT OF TH

PARLIAMENTS

W. ALOK

harry .

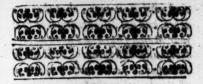
a nerwood parolact a ni bus essention allowed and seed 42 rese

Jave sien jed generalied wand



.irounod

Printed for United Steams Levist.



Tothe

K In Number that

Moft gracious Soveraign :

Hofe that are suppress monthy filent , vaishing that the common illia all fore might be with

their particular misfereance:wbich disposizion ; es is uncharicable in all mon , forworld is be in me more dogge-like then man like, so bite the flane thus ftrooke me : (to wit) the borrowed anchoring of my Doveraigne mifinformed , feeing shen armes and hunds that flang it were most of them atroady rotton. For I must

must confesse it ever, that they are debts, and not discontentments, that your Majesty hath laid upon me; the debts and obligation of a friendlesse adversity, savre more payable in all Kinds, then those of the prosperous: All which, nor the least of them, though I cannot discharge, I may yet endeavour it.

And notwithstanding my refiraint bath retrenched all wayes, as well the wayes of labour and will, as of all other imployments, yet bath it left with me my cogitations, then which I have nothing else to offer on the Altar of my Love.

Of those (most graciom Soveraigne) I have used some part in the following dispute, between a Counsellour of Estate, and a Lustice of Peace, the one dissuading, the other persuading the calling of a Parliament. In all which, since the Norman Conquest (at the least so many, as Histories have gathered) I have in some

some things in the following Dia logue presented your Majesty with the contentions and successes.

be

Se

e-

5,

nd

et

ıs,

10

v.

be de

1

Some things there are, and those of the greatest, which because they ought first to be resolved on. I thought fit to range them in the front of the rest, to the end your Majesty may be pleased to examine your own great and Princely hears of their acceptance, or refusall.

The first is, that supposition, that your Majesties Subjects give nothing but with adjustion of their own interest, interlacing in one, and the same act your Majesties reliefe, and their own liberties; not that your Majesties piety was ever suspected, but because the best Princes are ever the least jealom, your Majesty judging others by your self, who have abused your Majesties trust. The sear d continuance of the like abuse may perswade the provision But this caution, how ever it seem.

eth at first sight, your Majesty shall perceive by many examples following but frivolous. The bonds of Subjects to their Kings should alwayes be twrought one of Iron, the bonds of Kings unto Subjects but with Cobwebs.

This is (most renowned some ranges) what this trafficke of asserances hash been often unged; of which, if the Conditions had been onsie, our Kings have accasing kept them; if hard and prejudicially either to their honours or estaces, the Creditours have been paid their debts which their own presumption.

Far all binding of a King by Law upon the advantage of his necoffity, makes she breach is folfhardfull in a King, His Chartens
and all other influences being us
other then the furnishing wirtustes
of unconfirmed with a Princeps
uon subjecteur niss for volum-

tate

tate libera, mero motu & certa Scientia: Necessary words in all the grants of a King wisnessing that the same grants were given

freely and knowingly.

The second resolution will rest in your Majesty, leaving the new impositions, all Monopolies, and other grievances of the people to the consideration of the House, Provided, that your Majesties revenue be not abased, which if your Majesty shall result last long, and the iffues will be doubtfull: And on the contrary if your Majesty vouchfase it, it may perchance be stiled a yeelding, which seemeth by the sound to brave the Regulty.

But (mose excellent Prince) much as other is it to all eares of the Wife; but as the sound of a trumpet, hoving blasted forth a false Alarma, became but common aire? Shall the head yeeld to the feeta? sersainly it

ought ,

1 4

ne-

eyes

mde

of aem ept

ept illo

eu m-

69

11/1

21

2

ought, when they are grioved, for wisdome will rather regard the commodity, then object the disgrace, feeing if the feet lye in setters, the head cannot be freed, and where the feet seele but their own paines, the head doth not onely suffer by participiation, but without by consi-

deration of the evill.

Certainly the point of bonour well weighed hath nothing in it to even the ballance, for by your Majesties favour , your Majesty doth not yeeld either to any perfon, or to any power , but to a dispute onely , in which the Proposition and Minor prove nothing without a conclusion, which no other person or power can make , but a Majesty: yea , this in Henry the third his time was called a wisedome incomparable, For, the King raifed again recovery his authority: For , being in that extremity as he was driven with she Queen and his Children , Cum AbbaAbbatibus & Prioribus satis humilibus hospitia quærere & prandia: For the rest, may it please your Majesty to consider that there can nothing befall your Majesty in matters of assaires more unsortunately, then the Commons of Parliament with ill successe: A dishonour so persuative and adventurous as it will not onely find arguments; but it will take the leading of all enemies that shall offer themselves against your Majesties estate.

for

the

the

es .

th

to

1,

7

6

Le Tabourin de la paurete ne faict poinct de breuct: of which dangerous disease in Princes, the remedy doth chiesly consist in the love of the people, which how it may be had & held, no man knowes better then your Majesty; how to loose it, all men know, and know that it is lost by nothing more then by the desence of others in wrong doing. The onely motives of mischances

A

febances that ever come to Kings of this Land fince the Conquest.

It is onely love (most renowned Soveraign) must prepare the way for your Majesties following desires. It is love which obeyes, which suffers, which gives, which slickes at nothing; which Love, as well of your Majesties people, as the love of God to your Majesty, that it may alwayes hold shall be the continual prayers of your Majesties most bumble yassall,

Walter Ralegh.



DIALOGUE

Between & COUNSELLOUR

of STATA,

STICE Of

PEACE.

COUNSELLOUS.

res. fuf. sat of may wall

DOS OW sir, what think you of M. S. Johns tryall in Star-Chamber? I know that the bruit ranne that he was hardly dealt withall, because he was imprisoned in the

Tower, feeing his diffwallon from granting a Benevolence to the King was warranted by the Law.

Justice. Surely Sir it

made manifest at the hearing, that M. S. John was rather in love with his own letter ; he confessed he had feen your Lordships letter , before hee wrote his to the Major of Marleborough, and in your Lordships letter, there was not a word whereto the Statutes by Mr. Sr. John alleadged, had refesence; for those Statutes did condemn the gathering of money from the subject, undertitle of a freegift; whereas a fift, a fixt, a tenth, &c. was fet down and required. But my good Lord, though divers Shires have given to his Majeftie, some more, some leffe, what is this to the Kings debt ?

COUNS. Wee know it well e-

jects.

I us r. It is true my good Lord: but your Lordship will find, that when by these you have drawn many perty summes from the subjects, and those sometimes spena as fast as they are gathered, his Majesty being nothing enabled thereby, when you shall be forced to dear and your great aide; the the Country will excuse it self in regard of their former payments.

Couns. What mean you by the

great aide 3

[3]

Jus T. I mean the aide of Parlis-

COUNS. By Parliament, I would fain know the man that durft perswade the King unto it, for if it should succeed ill, in what case were he?

en

ice

cre

tes

fe-

n-

om

ft s

725

od

en

le,

dien tyle at my be he

lus T. You fay well for your felf my Lord, and perchance you that are lovers of your felves (wader pardon) do follow the advice of the late Duke of Alva, who was ever opposite to all resolutions in businesse of importance; for if the things enterprifed, fucceeded well, the advice never came in queftion; if ill , (whereto great underrakings are commonly subject) he then made his advantage by remembring his Countrey Councell : But my good Lord, thefe referred Polititians are not the best fervants, for he that is bound to adventure his life for his Mafter, is also bound to adventure his advice , Keep not back Councell (faith

Ecclefusition) when it may do good.

Couns. But Sir, I speak it not in other respect then I think it dangerous for the King to assemble the three estates, for thereby have our former Kings alwayes lost somewhat of their prerogaines. And because that you shall not think that I speak it at ran-

dome,

dome, I will begin with elder times, wherein the first contention began be twist the Kings of this land and their subjects in Parliament.

Iust. Your Lordfhip thall do

me a fingular favour,

Couns. You know that the Kings of England had no formal Parliament till about the 18, year of Hen. the first, for in his 17 year for the marriage of his Daughter, the King tailed a tax upon every hide of land by the advice of his privy Councell alone. But you may remember how the subjects soon after the establishment of this Parliament, began to stand upon termes with the King, and deew from him by strong hand and the sword the great charter.

Jus 7. Your Lordship sayes well, they drew from the King the great charter by the sword; and hereof the Parliament cannot be accused, but the Lords.

Couns. You say well, but it was after the establishment of the Parliament, and by colour of it, that they had so great daring; for before that time they could not endure to hear of Sr. Edmord: lawes, but actified the conformation in all they could, although

by those lawes the Subjects of this Iland were no lesse free than any of

all Europe.

CIL

ß.

of ax ice ou

on a-th

I, we se

Ja S T. My good Lord, the reafon is manifeft; for while the Normore and other of the French that followed Conquerour made spoyle of the English, they would not endure sharany thing but the will of the Conquerous fhould fland for Law : but after a difcent or two when themfelves were become English, and found themselves bearen with their own rods, they then began to favour the difference berween fubjection and flavery, and infift upon the Law, Meum & tugne, and to be able to fay unto themselves, bes fac or vives : yea that the conquering English in Ireland did the like , your Lordfhip knowes it better than Land

Couns. I think you guelle aright: And to the end the fubject may know that being a faithfull fervane to his Prince he might enjoy his own life, and paying to his Prince what belongs to a Soveraigne, the remainder was his own to dispose. There's the first to content his Vallals gave them the great Chapter, and the chapter of

Forreffs.

Just. What reason then had

K. fobs to deny the confirmation.

Couns. He did not, but he on the contrary confirmed both the Charters with additions, & required the Pope whom he had them made his superior to strengthen him with a golden Bal.

Jus T. But your honour knowes, that it was not long after, that he re-

pented himself.

Couns. It is rrue, and he had reason so to do for the Barons refused to follow him into France, as they ought to have done, and to fay true, this great charter upon which you infift to much , was not originally granted Regally and freely; for Henry the first did usurpe the Kingdome, and therefore the better to affure himfelf against Robert his eldeft Brother , hee flattered the Nobility and people with those charters. Yea King John that confirmed them , had the like respect for Arthur Duke of Britain, was the undoubted heir of the Crown, upon whom John usurped. And fo to conclude, these Charters had their originall from Kings de facto but not de jure.

Jus T. But King John confirmed the Charter after the death of his Nephew Arthur, when he was then Rex

de juer alfo.

COUNS.

Couns. It is true, for he durited no other, standing accursed, where by sew or none obeyed him, for his Nobility resusted to follow him into Scotland, and he had so grieved the people by pulling down all the Parke pales before harvest, to the end his Decre might spoil the corn, and by seizing the temporalities of so many Bishopricks into his hards, and chiefly for practising the death of the Duke of Britain his Nephew, as also having lost Normandy to the French, so as the hearts of all men were turned from him.

Ius T. Nay by your favour my Lord, King John restored E. Edwards Laws afternis absolution, and wrote his letters in the 13. of his reigne to all Sheriffes countermanding all former oppressions, yeathis he did not withstanding the Lords resuled to

follow him into France.

Couns. Pardon me, he did not restore King Edwards Lawes then, nor yet confirmed the Charters, but he promised upon his absolution to doe both: but after his return out of France, in his 16. year he denyed it, because without such a promise had not obtained restitution, his promise

mile being confirmined, and not vo-

Tus T. But what think you? was

n.

COUNS. Certainly no for it was determined the case of King Francis the first of France, that all promises by him made, whiles he was in the hands of charles the fift his enemy, were void, by reason the Judge of homour, which tells us he durit doe no other.

Jus T. But King lebn was not in

prilon.

Couns. Yerfor all that reftraint is imprisonment, you, feat it fellis imprisonment, and the King was subject to both : I know there is nothing more Kingly in a King than the performance of his word a buryes of a word freely and voluntarily given. Neither was the Chamer of Henry the first fo published, that all men might plead it for their advantage but a Charter was left (in depofite) in the hands of the Archbishop of Comerbury for the time, and fo to his fucceffours. Stephen Langthon, who was ever a Trapper to the King, produced this therer, and shewed it to the Barons there-

thereby encouraging them to make war against the King. Neither was it the old Charter Simply the Barons fought to have confirmed, but they presented unto the King other articles and orders, tending to the alteration of the whole commonwealth, which when the King refused to figne, the Barons prefently pur shemfelyes into the field, and in rebellious and outragious fashion fent the King word, except he confirmed them , they would not defift from making war against him, till he had focisfied them therein, And in conclusion, the King being betrayed of all his Nobility , in effect was forced to grant the Charter of Magna Charta, and Charta de Pereffis, at fuch time as he was invironed with an Army in the Meadones of Staynes, which hatters being procused by force, Pope Innocent afterward difavowed, and threatned to custe the Barons if they fubmitted not themselves as they ought to their Souernigne Lord, which when the Lords refused to obey, the King entestained an army of ftrangers for his own defence, wherewith having maftered and besten the Barons, they called in Lewez of France (a most unnaturali resolution) to be their

(CE

he

(K)

no

int

Lis

b

ng

CI:

fa

m.

be

ht

de

01 5. 4 15g their King Neither was Magna Charta a Law in the 19. of Henry the 2d but simply a Charter which hee confirmed in the 21. of his reigne, and made it a Law in the 25. according to Liuserons opinion. Thus much for the beginning of the Great Charter, which had first an obscure birth from usurpation, and was secondly softered and showed to the world by rebellion.

Just. I cannot deny but that all your Lordship hath said is true; but seeing the Charters were afterwards so many times confirmed by Parliament and made Lawes, and that there is nothing in them unequall or prejudicial to the King, doth not your Honour think it reason they should be

observed?

COUNS. Yes, and observed they are in all that the state of a King can permit, for no man is destroyed but by the Lawes of the land, no man districted of his inheritance but by the Lawes of the land, imprisoned they are by the prerogative where the King hath causer of suspect their loyalty for were it otherwise, the King should never come to the knowledge of any conspiracy r Treason against his Person or state, and being imprisoned, yet

doth not any man fuffer death but by

Jus T. But may it please your Lordship, were not Cornewallis, Sharpe, and Hoskins imprisoned, being no suspition of Treason there?

Couns. They were ; but it coft

them nothing.

on

ind

to

he

ich

ur-

nd

all

Ot

fo

nt

18. 1-1Jus T. And what got the King by it? for in the conclusion (besides the murmure of the people) Convendin, Sharpe, and Hoskins having greatly overshot themselves, and repented them, a fine of 5 or 6001, was laid on his Majesty for their offences, for so much their diet cost his Majesty.

Counter. I know who gave the advice, fixe I am that it was none of mine: But thus I fay, if you confule your memory, you shall find that those Kings which did in their own times confirme the Magne Charte, did not onely imprison, but they caused of their Nobility and others to be slain without hearing or tryall,

Just. My good Lord, if you will give me leave to speak freely, I say, that they are not well advised that per-swade the King not to admit the Magna Charas with the former selections. For as the King can never lose a far-

a farthing by it as I fhall prove anon! So except England were as Naples is, and kept by Garrifons of another Nation, it is impossible for a King of Esgland to greaten and inrich himfelf by any way so afforedly, as by the love of his people: For by one rebellion the King hath more loffe then by a hundred years observance of Magna Charta, For therein have our Kings been forced to compound with Rosgues and Rebels , and to patdon them , yes the flate of the King, the Mountchie, the Nobility have been endangered by them.

Couns. Well Sir , let that paffe , why fhould nor our Kings raife mony as the Kings of Prince do by their letters and Edices onely? for mice the time of Leves the 1'1, of whom it is faid, that he freed the French Kings of their wardinip, the French Kings have feldome affembled the flares for my contribution.

Just. I will rell you why : the igth of England doth confift of the people and Yeomanny, the Perants of Frence have no courage nor ames: In France every Village and Burrough hath a callle, which the French call Cheffean Villain, every good Giry hith

a good Cittadell, the King harb the Regiments of his guards and his men at armesalwayes in pay ; yea the Nobility of France in whom the ftremeth of France conlifts, doe alwayes affift the King in those leavies , because themselves being free, they made the fame leavies upon ther Tennants. But my Lord, if you marke it, Fasse was never free in effect from civill wars and lately it was endangered either to be conquered by the Spaniard, or to be cantonized by the rebellious French themselves, fince that freedome of Wardship. But my good Lord, to leave this digression , that wherein I would willingly farific your Lordfhip , is, that the Kings of England have neverteeeived loffe by Parliament, or prejudice.

Couns. No Sir, you shall find that the subjects in Parliament have decreed great things to the disadvantage and dishonour of our Kingsin

former times.

of he ments

ny the sest the dinhill the

Just. My good Lord, to avoid confusion, I will make a short repities on of them all, & then your Lordship may object where you fee cause; And I doubt not but to give your Lords thip letislation. In the list years

Henry the 3d there was no dispute the house gave the King two shillings of every plough land within England, and in the end of the fame year he had escuage payed him (to wir) for every Knights fee two marks in filver. In the fifth year of that King, the Lords demaunded the confirmation of the Great Charter which the Kings Councell for that time present excused, alleadging that those priviledges, were exhorted by force during the Kings Minoritie, and yet the King was pleafed to fend forth his writto the Sheriffes of every Countrey, requiring them to certific what those hberties were, and how used , andia exchange of the Lords demaund, because they preffed him so violently, the King required all the castles and places which the Lords held of his, and had held in the time of his Father, with those Manors and Lordships which they had heretofore wrested from the Crown, which at that time (the King being provided of forces) they durft not deny, in the 14 year he had the 15. peny of all goods given him, upon condition to confirme the Great Charter: For by reason of the wars in France , and the loffe of Rasi.

un-

ed,

ės,

the

ing

to

EC.

ofe

lin

be-

nd

is.

er,

ps

ed

ne

at en he he

chell, he was them enforced to confent to the Lords in all they demanded, in the tenth of his reigne he fined the City of London at 50000, marks, because they had received Lewis of France, in the II. year in the Parliament at Oxford, he revoked the great Charter, being granted when he was under age, and governed by the Earle of Pembroke and the Bilhop of Winchefter, in this II. year the Earles of Cornewall and Cheffer, Marshall, Edward Earle of Pembroke, Gilbert Earle of Gloucester, Warren, Hereford, Fer rars, and Warwick, and others tebelled against the King, and constrained him to yeeld unto them in what they demaunded for their particular interest, which rebellion being appealed, he fayled into France, and in his 15. year he had a 15th of the temporality, and a disme and a half of the spirituality, and withall escuage of every Knights fee.

COUNS. But what fay you to the Parliament of Westminster in the 16th of the King, where notwithstanding the wars of France and his great charge in repulsing the Welsh rebels, he was stally denyed the Subsidy demanded.

Iust. I confesse, my Lord, that



the house excused themselves by reafon of their poverty, and the Lords taking of Armes; in the next year it was manifest that the house was practifed aganft the King : And was it not fo, my good Lord, think you in our two laft Parliaments, for in the first even those whom his Majesty trusted moft, berrayed him in the union, and in the fecond there were other of the great ones ran counter. But your Lordthip spake of dangers of Patliaments, in this, my Lord, there was a denyall , but there was no danger at all : but to returne where I left , what got the Lords by practizing the house at that time ? I fay that those that brake this staffe upon the King, were overturned with the counterbuffe, for he refumed all those lands which he had given in his minority, he called all his exacting officers to accompt, he found them all faulty ; he examined the corsuption of other Magistrates, and from all thele he drew fufficient money to fatisfie his prefent necessity; whereby he not onely spared his people, but highly contented them with an act of fo great luffice : Yea Haden Earle of Kent , the chief Iuffice whom he had most trusted, and most advanced,

n

fa

jef

his

60

thi

tta

cd

the

ced, was found as falle to the King as any one of the rest. And for conclusion in the end of that year at the affembly of the States at Lambeth, the King had the fortieth part of every mans goods given him freely toward his debts, for the people, who the same year had refused to give the King any thing, when they saw he had squeased those spunges of the Common wealth, they willingly yeelded to give him satisfaction.

Couns. But I pray you what became of this Habert, whom the King, had favoured above all men betraying.

CORRS.

his Majesty as he did.

ds it ic ot

ur ed ed he

ts,

ot at

ke

erbe

ad his nd

prnd

10-

7. 与祖子用 点。

Ius T. There were many that perswaded the King to put him to death, but he could not be drawn to confent, but the King feized upon his effate which was great; yet in the end he left him a sufficient portion, and gave him his life because he had done great fervice in former times: Forthis Majefty, though he tooke advantage of his vice, yet he forgot not to have confideration of his verrue. And upon this occasion it was that the King , betrayed by those whom he most trusted , entertained firangers , and gave them their offices and the charge of B 2

A

his Caftles and fittong places in England.

Couns. But the drawing in of those ftrangers was the cause that Meshall Earle of Pembroke moved ware

gainst the King.

Tu st. It is true, my good Lord, but he was foon after flain in Ireland and his whole masculine race, ten yeares extinguished , shough there were five Sons of them, and Marshal, being dead, who was the mover and ring-leader of that war , the King pardoned the reft of the Lords that had affifted Marshall.

COUNS. What reason had the

King fo to doe ?

Jus T. Because he was perswaded, that they loved his person, and only hated those corrupt Counsellors, that then bare the greatest sway under him, as also because they were the best men of war he had, whom if he destroyed, having war with the French, he had wanted Commanders to have ferved him.

Couns. But what reason had the Lords to take armes } i non pro a

I ca tilli

Just. Because the King enter tained the Poillevins , were ! shey the Kings vallals alfo ! Show



the Spaniards rebell, because the Spanish King trufts to the Neapolitans, Fortagues, Millanoies, and other Nations his vallals , feeing those that are governed by the Vice-royes and deputies, are in policy to be well entertained & to be employed, who would otherwise devise how to free themfelves; whereas, being trufted and imployed by their Prince, they entertain themselves with the hopes that other the Kings vaffals do, if the King had called in the Spaniards, or other Nations, not his Subjects, the Nobilitic of England had reason of grief.

COUNS. But what people didever serve the King, of England more faithfully then the Gastoynes did, even to the last of the conquest of that

Duchie ?

ord,

ten

shal.

and

par-

tahe

aded,

only

inder

e che

ifhe

neuch,

I us T. Your Lordship sayes well, and I am of that opinion, that if it had pleased the Queen of Eng. to have drawn some of the chief of the Irish Nobilitie into Eng. and by exchange to have made them good free-holders in Eng. the had sayed above 2. millions of pounds, which were consumed in times of those Rebullions, For what held the great Cassigns firms to the



Crown of England (of whom the Duke of Efpernon married the Inheritrix) but his Earldome of Kendall in England, whereof the Duke of Efpernon (in right of his Wife) beares the Title to this day? And to the fame end I takeir, hath Tames our Soveraign Lord given Lands to divers of the Nobilitie of Sectland. And if I were worthy toadvife your Lordship, I should think that your Lordship should do the King great fervicey to pur him in mind to prohibire allthe Stonift Nation to alienate and fell away their inherirance here ; for shey felling , they not only give cause to the English to complain, that the Trenfure of England is transported into Septland, but his Majeftie is thereby alfor fruftrated of making both Nations one, and of af furing the fervice and obedience of the Scors in furure.

Conns. You say well for though these of Sentand thus are advanced and enriched by the Kings Majestles will, no doubt serve him faithfully, yet how their leites and successors, having so inheritance to lose in England, may be seduced, is uncertain. But he us go on with our Parliament. And what say you to the denyall, in the 26th.



26th. year of his reigne, even when the King was invited to come into France by the Earle of March, who had married his Mother, and who promifed to affilt the King in the conquest

of many places loft ?

ven

e of

ink

the

eti

Mu-

red ill yet made her mid

Iust. It is true my good Lord, that a subsidie was then denied, and the reasons are delivered in English Histories, and indeed the King not long before had fpent much Treasure in aiding the Duke of Pritain to no purpole; for he drew over the King but to draw on good conditions for himself, as the Earle of March his father in law now did : As the English Barons did invite Lewes of France not long before, as in elder times all the Kings and States had done, and in late years the Leaguers of France entertained the Spaniards, and the French Protestants and Netherlands, Queen Elizabeth . not with any purpole to greaten those that aide them, but to purchase to themselves an advantageous peace. But what fay the Hiftories to this denyall? They fay, with a world of payments there mentioned, that the King had drawn the Nobility drie. And befides , that whereas. not long before great fummes of mo-DCY B 4

Ā

ney were given, and the fame appointed to be kept in four Castles, and not to be expended but by the advice of the Peeres; it was beleeved, that the fame Treasure was yet unspent.

Couns. Good Sir you have faid enough; judge you whether it were nor a dishonour to the King to be so tyed, as not to expend his Treasure but by other mens advice, as it were

by their licence.

Ius r. Surely, my Lord, the King was well advised to take the money upon any condition, and they were fooles that propounded the reffraint; for it doth not appear, that the King took any great heed to thole overfeers: Kings are bound by their pietie, and by no other obligation. In Queen Maries time, when it was thought that the was with Child, it was propounded in Parliament, that the rule of the Realme fhould be given to King Philip , during the minoritie of the hoped Prince or Princelle; and the King offered his affurance in great fummes of money, to relinquish the Government at such time as the Prince or Princeffe fhould be of age : At which motion , when all elfe were filest in the House, Lord



not

e of

the

faid

rere

e fo

fure

cte

ney

ere

nt;

the

ofe

eir

In

vas

d.

r,

be

nnofy, ch ld en

Lord Darres (who was none of the wifest) asked who shall fue the Kings Bonds ? which ended the dispute, (for what other Bond is between a King and his vaffals, then the Bond of the Kings Faith?) But, my good Lord, the King, notwithstanding the denyall at that time, was with gifts from particular persons, and otherwise, fupplyed for proceeding of his journey for that time into France; he took with him 30 Caskes filled with Silver and Coyne, which was a great Treafure in those dayes. And laftly , notwichstanding the first denyall, in the Kings absence he had Escuage granted him (to wit) 20s. of every Knights. Fcc.

Couns. What fay you then to the 28th year of that King, in which when the King demanded reliefe, the States would not confent, except the the fame former order had bin taken for the appointing of 4 overfeers for the treasure: as also that the Lord chief lustice and the L. Chancelor, should be chosen by the States, with some Barons of the Exchequer and other officers.

Just. My good Lord, admit the king had yeelded their demands,



then whatfoever had been ordained by those Magistrates to the dislike of the Common-wealth, the people had been without remedie , whereas while the King made them, they had their appeal and other remedies. But those demands vanished, and in the end the King had escuage given him, with our any of their conditions. It is an excellent vertue in a King to have parience, and to give way to the furie of mens passions. The Whale when he is firucken by the fifterman , growes into that furie, that he cannot be refifted : but will overthrow all the Ships and Barkes that come into his way; but when he hath tumbled a while, he is drawn to the shore with a twin'd thred.

Couns. What fay you then to

King?

Iust. I fay, that the Commons being unable to pay, the King relieves himfelf upon the richer fort: and fo it like wife happened in the 33. of that King, in which he was relieved chiefly by the Citie of London. But, my good Lord, in the Parliament in London in the 38th year, he had given him the seath of all the revenues of the Church

hile

heir

ofe

the

nh

an.

paof

eis

te-

the

his

明からをする前に

Church for 3 years, and three marks of every Knights Fee throughout the Kingdome, upon his promise and oath upon the observing of Magna Charta, but in the end of the same year , the King being then in France , he was denyed the aides which he required. What is this to the danger of a l'arliament ? especially at this time they had reason to refuse, they had given fo great a funime in the beginning of the same year. And again; becaufe it was known that the King had but pretended war with the King of Csfile, with whom he had fecterly con-tracted an alliance, and concluded a Marriage betwixt his Son Edward and the Lady Elenor. Thefe falfe fires do but fright Children, and it commonly falls out , that when the cause given is known to be falle, the necessitie pretended is thought to be fained. Royall dealing hath evermore Royall fucceffe; and as the King was denyed in the eight and thirtieth year, fo was he denyed in the nine and thirtieth year , because the Nobilitie and the people faw it plainely, that the K. was abufed by the Pope, who as well in de-fpite to Manfred baftard Son to the Emperour Frederick the fecond : as to COZER

cozen the King and to waste him. would needes bestow on the King the Kingdome of Siely ; to recover waich the King fent all the Treasure he could borrow or fcrape to the Pope, and withall gave him letters of credence, for to take up what he could in Italy, the King binding himfelf for the payment, Now , my good Lord, the wildome of Princes is feen in nothing more then in their enterprises, So how unpleasing it was to the State of England to confume the Treasure of the Land, and in the conquest of Sicily fo far off, and otherwise, for that the English had loft Normandie under their nofes , and fo many goodly parts of Prance, of their own proper inheritances : the reason of the denyall is as well to be confidered as the denyall.

Couns. Was not the King also denyed a Subsidie in the fortie first of

his reigne?

In s.T. No, my Lord: for although the King required money as before, for the impossible conquest of Sicily, yet the House offered to give 32000 marks, which whether he refused accepted, is uncertain; and whilst the King dreamed of Sicily, the Welst invaded cre-

ald

for

ıd,

no-

ate

ure

of

for

an-

dly

per lehe

of

gh or are shed

invaded and spoyled the borders of England; for in the Parliament of London , when the King urged the House for the prosecuting the conquest of Sicily, the Lords utterly difliking the attempt, urged the profecuting of the Welfhmen : which Parliament being protoged did again afsemble at Oxford, and was called the mad Parliament, which was no other then an affembly of rebels, for the royal affent of the King which gives life to all Lawes, form'd by the three estates, was not a royall affent, when both the King and the Prince were constrained to yeeld to the Lords. A conftrained confent is the confent of a Captive and not of a King and therefore there was nothing done their cither legally or royally. For if it benot properly a Parliament where the fubject is not free, certainely it can be none wherethe King is bound , for all Kingly rule was taken from the King, and twelve Peeres appointed, and as fome Writers have it 24. Peeres, to governe the Realme, and therefore the affembly made by Jack Straw and other rebels may alwell be called a Parliament as that of Oxford. Principis nomen babere , non eff effe princeps',

for thereby was the K. driven not only to compound all quarrels with the French, but to have meanes to be revenged on the rebell Lords: but he quitted his right to Normanly, so jon and Mayne.

C Ou N's. But Sir, what needed this extremity, seeing the Lords required but the confirmation of the former Charter, which was not prejudicial fp

to the King to grant?

Just. Yes my good Lord, but they insulted upon the King, and would not fuffer him to enter into his own Caftles , they put down the Purveyor of the meat for the maintenance of his house; as if the King had been abankrupt, and gave order that without ready money he should not take up a Chicken, And though there is nothing against the royalry of a King in these Charters (the Kings of England being Kings of freemen and not of flaves) yet it is fo contraty to the nature of a King to be forced even to those things which may be to his advantage, as the King had fome reason to seek the dispensation of his oath from the Pope, and to draw in firangers for his own defence : year jure falvo Corona nofira is intended inclusively in all oathes and promises

exacted from a Soveraigne.

COUNS. But you cannot be ignorant how dangerous a thing it is to eall in other Nations both for the spoil they make, as also, because they have often held the possession of the best places with which they have been trusted.

Ju s T. It is true my good Lord, that there is nothing fo dangerous for a King as to be confirmined and held as priloner to his vaffals, for by that, Edward the second, and Richard the fecond loft their Kingdomes and their lives. And for calling in offtrangers, was not King Edward the fixth driven to call in strangers against the Rebels in Norfolke , Cornwall , Oxfordthire and elfewhere ? Have not the Kings of Scotland been oftentimes constrained to entertain ftrangers against the Kings of England : And the King of England at this time had he not bin diverse times affifted by the Kings of Scotland & had bin endanger ed to have been expelled for ever.

Couns. But yet you know those Kings were depoted by Parliament.

Just. Yea my good Lotd being Priloners, being out of polletion, and

cing

a fe

fte

lor

de

me

he

le

be

Ki

he

of

Al

fu

di

y

being in their hands that were Princes of the blood and pretenders. It is an old Countrey Proverbe, (that Might overcomes Right) a weak title that weares a ftrong fword, commonly prevailes against a strong title that weares but a weak one, otherwife Philip the fecond had never been Duke of Portugal, nor Duke of Millayne, norKing of Naples & Sicily. But good Lord, Errores non funt trabendi in exem. plum. I speak of regall, peaceable, and lawfull Parliaments. The King at this time was but a King in name, for Glocefter, Leicester and Chichester made choise of other Nine, to whom the rule of the Realme was committed, and the Prince was forced to purchase his liberty from the Earle of Leicester, by giving for his ransome the Countey Pallatine of Cheffer. But my Lord let us judge of those occasions by their events, what became of this proud Earle? was he not foon after flain in Eyefham? was he not leftnaked in the field, and left a fhamfull spectacle, his head being cut off from his shoulders, his privic parts from his body, and laid on each fide of his nofe ? And did not God extinguish his race, after which in a lawfull Parliament

liament at Westminfter (confirmed in a following Parliament of Westminfter) were not all the Lords that followed Leycester difinheried ? And when that fool Glocefter after the death of Leycester (whom he had formerly forfaken) made himfelf the head of a second Rebellion, and called in strangers, for which not long before he had cried our against the King, was not he in the end, after that he had feen the flaughter of fo many of the Barons, the spoil of their Cafiles, and Lordships constrained to fubmit himself , as all the survivers did, of which they that sped beft, payed their fines and ranfomes, the King referving his younger Son, the Earledomes of Levcefter and Derby.

and at yet

Couns. Well Sir, we have diffuted this King to the grave, though it be true, that he out-lived all his enemics, and brought them to confusion, yet those examples did not terrife their successors, but the Earle Matashall, and Hereford, threatned King. Edward the first, with a new War.

I us T. They did fo, but after the death of Hereford, the Earle Marshall repented himself, and to gain the Kings favour, he made him heir



go

pe

ha

pa

ye

0

re de

pe

Vi

ai fr

ty

G

ti

of all his Lands. But what is this to the Parliament? for there was never king of this land had more given him for the time of his raign, then Edward the Son of Henry the third had.

Couns. How doth that appear? Just. In this fort my good Lord, in this Kings third year he had given him the fiftcenth part of all goods. In his fixt year a twentyeth. In his twelfth year a twentyeth, in his fourteenth year he had escuage (to wit) forty Thillings of every Knights Fee, in this eighteenth year he had the eleventh part of all moveable goods within the Kingdome, in his nineteenth year the tenth part of all Church livings in England, Scotland and Ireland, for fix years , by agreement from the Pope, in his three and twentieth year he raifed a taxe upon Wool and fels, and on a day caused all the religious houses to be scarched, and all the treafure in them to be feized and brought to his coffers, excuting himself by laying the fault upon his Treasurer, he had also in the end of the same year, of all goods of all Burgeffes, and of the Commons the 10th part, in the 25th year of the Parliament of St. Edmundsbury, he had an 18th part of the goods

goods of the Burgesses, and of the people in generall, the tenth part. He had also the same year by putting the Clergie out of his protection a fifth part of their goods, and in the same year he fet a great taxe upon Woolls, to wit, from half a marke to 40 s. upon every fack, whereupon the Earle Marshall, and the Earle of Hereford refusing to attend the King into Flanders, pretended the greevances of the people. Purinthe end the King haying pardoned them, and confirmed the great Chareer, he had the ninth penny of all goods from the Lords and Commons of the Clergie, in the South he had the tenth penny, and in the North the fife penny. In the two and thirtyerh year he had a fubledy freely granted. In the three and thirtyeth year he confirmed the great Charter of his own Royall disposition, and the flates to flew their thankfulneffe, gave the King for one year , the fift part of all the revenues of the land, and of the Cirizens the fixt part of their goods. And in the same year the King used the inquisition called Trai le Baston. By which all Justices and other Mogistraces were grievously fined that had used extortion '

d, mahh y s

tion or bribery, or had otherwife misdemeaned themselves to the great contentation of the people. This Commission likewise did enquire of entruders, bararors, and all other the like vermine, whereby the King gathered a great masse of treasure with a great deal of love. Now for the whole raigne of this King, who governed England 35 years, there was not any Parliament to his prejudice.

Cou Ns. But there was taking of armes by Marshall and Hereford.

Jus T. That 's true, but why was that? because the King, notwithstanding all that was given him by Parliament, did lay the greatest faxes that ever King did without their consent. But what lost the King by those Lords; one of them gave the King all his lands, the other dyed in distract.

COUNS. But what fay you to the Parliament in Edward the Seconds time his successor: did not the house of Parliament banish Peince Gaveling whom the King sayoured?

Jus T. But what was this Gavefor but an Esquier of Gascoine, formerly banisht the Realme by King Edward the first, for corrupting the Prince Edward, now raigning, And the whole.

King-



fe at is is in the in the

Kingdome fearing and detefting his venemous disposition, they belought his Majestie to cast him off, which the King performed by an act of his own, and not by act of Parliament, yea Cavestones own father in Law, the Earle of Gloceffer, was one of the chiefeft of the Lords that procured it. And yet finding the Kings affection to follow him to ftrongly, they all confented to have him recalled. Afterwhich when his credit fo encreased, that he dispised and fet at naught all the ancient Nobility, and not onely perswaded the King to all manner of outrages and riots, but withall transported what he listed of the Kings Treasure, and lewels : the Lords utged his banishment the second time, but neither was the first nor fecond banishment forced by Act of Parliament, but by the forceable Lords his Enemies. Laftly he being recalled by the King, the Earle of Lancafter caused his head to be fricken off, when those of his party had taken him prisoner. By which prefumptuous Act, the Earle and the seft of his company committed Treason and murder : Treason by railing an Army without warrant, murder by taking away the life of the Kings

pro

get

not

out

befo

bec

Kin

a K

Her

Co

oth

zen

five

Wa

Len

Wa

Kn

the

toc

Lo

the

un

co

Kings Subject. After which Gardis being dead, the Spencers got possession of the Kings favour, though the younger of them was placed about the King, by the Lords themselves.

Couns. What fay you then to

the fixt year of that King.

Just. I say that King was not bound to performe the acts of this Parliament, because the Lords being too strong for the King, inforced his consent, for these be the words of our own History. They wrested to much beyond the bounds of reason.

Couns. What fay you to the Patliaments of the White wands in

the 19th of the King.

Jus T. I say the Lords that were so moved, came with an Army, and by strong hand surprized the King, they constrained, (fairn the story) the rest of the Lords and compelled many of the Bishops to consent unto them, yea it saith further; that the King durst not but grant to all that they required, (to wit) for the banishment of the Spencers. Yea shey were so insolent that they refused to lodge the Queen comming through Kew in the Castle of Lordes, and sent her to

provide

provide her lodging where the could get it fo late in the night, for which notwithstanding some that kept her out were foon after taken and hang'd, and therefore your Lordship cannot call this a Parliament for the reasons before alleadged. But my Lord what became of these Lawgivers to the King, even when they were greateft, a Knight of the North called Andrew Herkeley, affembled the Forces of the Countrey , overthrew them and their Army, flew the Earle of Hereford, and other Barons, took their generall Themas Earle of Lancafter, the Kings cozen-germane at that time poffeffed of five Earledomes , the Lords Clifford , Talbort , Monbray , Maudiut , Willington; Warren Lord Darcy , Withers , Knevill , Leybourne, Bekes, Lovell, Fitzwilliams, Watervild, and divers other Barons; Knights and Efquiers, and foon after the Lord Percy, and the Lord Wores took the Lords Baldfemere, and the Lord Andley, the Lord Teis, Gifford, Tucket, and many others that fled from the battaile, the most of which past under the hands of the hangman, for conftraining the King under colour and name of a Parliament. But this your good Lordfhip may judge, to whom

対は日本は

the

mai

dan

in (

call

gre difp

hap

day

yea

Kir.

vea

his

lian

use

Clun the

not

Wo

the

whi gran

whom , thefe tumultuous affemblies hut (which our Histories, falfely call Par the liaments have been dangerous, the King in the end ever prevailed, and the Lords loft their lives , and effares. three After which the Spencers in their ba- Laffe nishment at Tork, in the 15th of the dur King, were restored to the honors beg and estates, and therein the King had a subsedy given him the fixt penny of goods throughout England, Ireland, and Wales.

Couns. Yet you fee the Spencers

were foon after diffolved.

Ius T. It is true my Lord, but that is nothing to our subject of Parliament , they may thank their own infolencie, for they branded and dispiled the Queen, whom they ought to have honored as the Kings wife; they were ten also exceeding greedy, and built themselves upon other mens ruines, they were ambitious and exceeding malicious, whereupon that came, that when Chamberlain Spencer was hang! in Hereford, a part of the 24th Plate he was written over his head : onidgle riaris in malitia potens ?

Cours. Well Sir, you haveall this while excused your felf upon the firength and rebellions of the Lords



het what fay you now to King Edward the third , in whole time (and during the the time of this victorious King, no man durft take Armes or rebell) the tes. three estates did him the greatest affront that ever King received or endured, therefore I conclude where I

ba-the

296

ng

1 2

ots began, that these Parliaments are dangerous for a King,
of Just. To answer your Lordship in order, may it please you first to call to mind , what was given this great King by his subjects before the dispute betwixt him and the house hat happened, which was in his latter lia- dayes , from his first year to his fift year, there was nothing given the fed king by his Subjects , in his eight year at the Parliament at London a ere tenth and a fifreenth was graned , in ailt his tenth year he ceased upon the Iulians goods here in England to his own ule, with all the goods of the Monkes cluniackes and others, of the order of the Cifertians. In the eleaventh year, he had given him by Parliament a notable relief, the one half of the Woolls throughout England, and of the Clergy all their Woolls , after which, in the end of the year he had granted in his Parliament at Westmin-

fer, forty shillings upon every fact been be of Wooll, and for every 30 wooll crusted fels forty shillings, for every last of Co leatherne, as much, and for all other shall a merchandizes after the same rate. The those King promifing that this years ga-vance, thering ended, he would thenceforth Jucontent himself with the old custome, whom he had over and above this great aide the eight part of all goods of all Ci. Iu tizens and Burgeffes; and of other wown e of forreigne Merchants, and fuch as not de lived not of the gain of breeding of in his sheep and cattell the fifteenth of their exercigoods. Nay my Lord: this was not heart (all, though more then ever was gran-there ted to any King , for the fame Patlisties it ment bestowed on the King the ninth Co Sheaf of all the corn within the Land, by four the ninth sleece, and the ninth lambe ment for two years next following; now his Ma what think your Lordship of this Par-] u liament.

men.
I u s T. And I say, the people are Majest as loving to their King now, as ever they were, if they be honefully and they k wilely dealt withall, and fo his Maje- them ! fly hath found them in his laft two Co Tarliaments , if his Majestie had not Ju been



speak

[41]

been betrayed by those whom he most

al trufted.

of Couns. But I pray you Sir, who the those whom he hath so greatly ada-yanced?

the Just. I will tell your Lordship
those whom he know your the those whom he hath so greatly ada-yanced?

the Just. I will tell your Lordship
the whom the King may trust.

Cours. Who are they?

Ilus T. His own reason , and his own excellent Iudgement which have not deceived him in any thing, where-of in his Majeffy hath been pleafed to it exercise them, Take connell of thine heart (faith the book of Wiledome) for there is none more |faithfull unto thee then it.

the Couns. It is true, but his Maje-ty found that those wanted no judge-ment whom he trusted, and how could his Majestie divine of their honesties?

Just. Will you pardon me if I fpeak freely, for if I fpeak out of live, which (as Solomon faith) covereth al trespasses, The truth is, that his Majestic would never believe any man that fpake against them , and they knew it well enough, which gave them boldneffe to do what they did.

Couns. What was that?
Just. Eyen, my good Lord, to TUBIC

fate of so great a King may be ruine C by men ambitious and greedy withou he proportion. It had been a brave is o in creafe of revenue , my Lord , to have lith rayled 300001 land of the Kings n Ju 200001 revenue, and to raife there once venue of wards to 200001 more or h 400001, added to the rest of his Majo ecce strice estate, had so enabled his Majo ny I flie, as he could never have wanted and, And my good Lord, it had been a hen honest service to the King, to have crown added 2000l. lands of the Lord of heT hams', Woods and goods being wor o ha 30000l, more. Lord

Couns. I know not the realogents,

why it was not done.

Aubig Jus T. Neither doth your Lord or was thip, perchance know the reason whe shich the 10000l. offer'd by Swinnerton for the a fine of the French wines, was by the lave of then Lord Treasurer conferr'd on De prexe vonshire and his Miffris.

vonshire and his Missis.

Couns. What moved the Treat of furer to reject and crosse that raising care

of the Kings lands ?

Just. The reason, my good Lord lingd is manifest, for had the land been rain the fed, then had the King known when he K he had given or exchanged land with the



asther at he had given or exchanged.

Lordship have made choice of the old rate cons, as well in that book of my Lordship, as in exchange of Theobalds, out or which he took Matheld in it, which the greatest subject, or favoration Queen Elizabeth had never durst the avenamed unto her by way of gifter the avenamed unto her by way Deprexchange. Nay my Lord, fo may other goodly Mannors have parted of from his Majestie, as the very
line part of the Kingdome mourneth
oremember it, and the eyes of the
ingdome shedde teares continually
rai at the beholding it: yea the foul of
the kingdome is heavy unto death
with the consideration thereof, that for
the consideration thereof, the consideration thereof, that for
the consideration thereof, the consideration the conside

magna-

[44]

magnanimous a Prince, flould fuffe have and t himfelf to be fo abused

Couns. But Sir you know the cobbams lands were entayled upon il nam

Cofens.

Just. Yearny Lord, but durin peque the lives and races of George Proble children , ichad been the kings , the is to fay, for ever in effect, but a heritance upon himfelf, be perlivale u, his Majestie to relinquish his introdell for a pretty fumme of mony; and the ing there might be no counterworking in the fent Prook 6000 l. to make friends all; whereof Lord Hume had 2006, but Parl again , Buckbarft and Barnick in the other 4000 l. and the Trealum mor and his heires the maffe of land for you ever.

Couns. What then I pray y came to the King by this great con fcation.

lusT. My Lord, the Kings Maje. Kin Rie by all those goodly pollessions, the

Woods and goods loofeth sool by platthe year which he giveth in pention furcion to cobban, to maintain him in prison.

Couns. Certainly, even in con- mit science they should have referred to cau much of the land in the Crown, as to mo

gaine paft . 1 rence

eur in yet,

don 247 1

cluc

have

have given cobbam meat and apparell, and not made themselves so great the rainers, and the King sool. (per an-mum) looser by the bargain, but it's past: Confilium non est corum que ficri

past: Consilium non est corum que sicri
un sequenns.

Ju S T. Take the rest of the Sentence, my Lord: Sed consilium versatur in its que sunt in nostra potestate. It is
tyet, my good Lotd, in potestate Resit, to right himself. But this is not
all my Lord; And I fear me, knowing your Lordships love to the King,
it would put you in a seaver to hear
all, I will therefore go on with my
Parliaments.

Gouns. I pray do so, and amongst the rest, I pray you what say
you to the Parliament holden at Ionton in the fifteenth year of King Ed-

don in the fifteenth year of King Ed-

In s T. I say there was nothing con-cluded therein to the prejudice of the king. It is true, that a little before os, t clitting of the house, the King difby placed his Chancellour and his Trea-furer, and most of all his Iudges and officers of the Exchequer, and com-mitted many of them to prifon, be-cause they did not supply him with money, being beyond the Seas, for

DEC

of

nef

Kir

Wa

but

in

vel

the

In

La

dif

the

Tr

no

Re

10

ce

in

the rest, the States assembled, be fought the King hat the Lawes of the two Charters might be observed, and that the great Officers of the Crowns might be chosen by Parlia nent.

Couns. But what fucceffe had

these peritions.

Ius T. The Charrers were observed, as before, and fothey will beever, and the other petition was tejected, the King being pleafd, notwithstanding, that the great Officers, thould take an oath in Parliament to do Iustice. Now for the Parliament of westminfter , in the 17th year of the King, the King had three markes and a half for every fack of Wool, transported; and in his 18th he had a 10th of the Clergie, and a 15th of the Lairy for one year. His Majeftie forbare after this to charge his Subjects with any more payments, untill the 29th of his reigne, when there was given the King by Parliament so for every fack of Wool transported for fix yeares, by which grant, the King received a thousand markes a day, a greater matter then a thoufand pounds in thefe dayes , and a 1000l. a day amounts to 365000l. year, which was one of the greatest prefents



the

and

fer-

ee-

te-

Ot-

115.

to

ant

the

nd II.

ad

of

6-

11

re

nt

presents that ever was given to a King of this land. For besides the cheapenesse of all things in that age, the Kings souldiers had but 3d. a days wages, a man ar armes 6d. a Knight but 2s. In the Parliament at Westminster, in the 33th year he had 26s. 8d. for every sack of Wooll transported, & in the 42th year 3 dismes and 3 sisteens. In his 45th year he had 50000l of the Laity, and because the Spiritualty, disputed it, and did not pay so much, the King chang'd his Ct ancellour, Treasurer, & Privy Seal being Bishops, and placed Lay men in their roome.

COUNS. It feems that in those dayes the Kings were no longer in love with their great Chancellors, then when they deserved well of them.

Just. No my Lord, they were not, and that was the reason they; were well served, and it was the cuflome then, and in many ages after, to change the Treasurer & the Chancellour every; years, and withall to hear all mens complaints against them.

COUNS. But by this often change,, the faying is verified, that there is no inheritance in the favour of Kings. He that keepeth the fage-tree (faith Selemon) shall ease the fruit thereofs;

ye

41

Sai

an

fo

fe

K

ha

fic

fa

to

W

g

n

d

1:

for reason it is that the fervant live by the Mafter.

Tust. My Lord, you fay well in both, but had the subject an inheritance in the Princes favour, where the Prince hath no inheritance in the Subjects fidelity, then were Kings in more unhappy estate then common persons, for the reft, Solomon meaneth not, that he that keepeth the figge tree should furfer, though he meant he thould eat, he meant not he should break the branches in gathering the figs, or eat the ripe; and leave the rotten for the owner of the tree; for what faith he in the following chapter, he faith that he that maketh baff to be ich , cannot be innocent. And before that , he faith , that the end of an inherisance baffily gotten, cannot be bleffed. Your Lordship hath heard of few or none great with Kings, that have not used their power to oppreffe, that have not growne insolent and hatefull to the people; yea, infolent towards those Princes that advanced them.

Cou Ns. Yet you fee that Princes

can change their fancies.

Ius T. Yea my Lord, when favorites change their faith, when they forget that how familiar foever Kings



make themselves with their Vallals yet they are Kings: He that provoketh a King to anger (laith Solomon) finneth against his own foul. And he further faith , that prile goeth before diffruction , and a high mind before a fall. I fay therefore, that in discharging those Lucifers, how dear foever they have been, Kings make the world know that they have more of Judgement then of paifion, yea they thereby offer a fatisfactory facrifice to all their people, too great benefits of subjects to their King, where the mind is blown up with their own deferyings, and to great benefits of Kings conferr'd upon their Subjects, where the mind is not qualified with a great deal of modefty are equally dangerous. Of this later and infolenter . had King Richard the second delivered up to Iustice but three or four, he had fill held the love of the people, and thereby his life and effate.

Couns. Well , I pray you go on

with your Parliaments.

in it in na ed cor ...

I u s r. The life of this great King Edward drawes to an end, fo do the Parliaments of this time, wherein so years raigne, he never received any affront, for in his 49th year he had a

[so]

Bu

wh

pre

by

in

m

in

Y-0

YC

ti

10 as

tu

fa

P

differ and a fifteen granted him free-

ly.

COUNS. But Sirit is an old faying, that all is well that ends well, laudge you whether that in his coth, year in Parliament at Westminster he received not an affront, when the house urged the King to remove and discharge from his presence the Duke of Lancaster, the Lord Lanimer his Chasherlaine, Sir Richard Sturgy, and others whom the King savoured and trusted. Nay, they present the King to thrust a certain Lady out of Court, which at that time bare the greatest sway therein.

I us T. I will with patience answeryour Lordship to the full, and first your Lordship may remember by that which I even now said, that never King had so many gifts as this King had from his subjects, and it hath never grieved the subjects of England to give to their King, but when they knew there was a devouring Lady, what had her share in all things that passed, and the Duke of Lancester was as scraping as shee, that the Chancellourdid eat up the people as sast as either of them both. Ir grieved the subjects to send these Cormorants.

th.

But my Lord there are two things by which the Kings of England have been. preft, (to wit) by their subjects, and by their own necessities. The Lords. in former times were farre ftronger, more warlike, better followed, living in their Countries, then now they are, Your Lordship may remember in your reading, that there were many Earles could bring into the field a: thousand Barbed norses , many a Baron s. or 600. Barbed horfes, whereas now very few of them can furnish, twenty fit to ferve the King. Burto fay the truth my Lord, the luftices of peace in England, have oppord the injusticers of war in England, the Kings writ runs over all, and the great Seal of England, with that of the next Constables will ferve the turn to. affront the greatest Lords in England, that shall move against the King. The force therefore by which our Kings in. former-times were troubled is vanishe away. But the necessities remain, The people therefore in these later ages, are no lesse to be pleased then the Pecres; for as the later are become leffe, fo by reason of the trayning through England, the Commons have all the weapons in their hand.

COUNS.

Couns. And was it not fo ever! 1 u s r. No my good Lord; for the Noblemen had in their Armories, to furnish some of them a thousand, some two thousand, some three thousand men, whereas now there are not many that can arme fifty.

Couns. Can you blame them? But I will onely answer for my felf,between you and me be it spoken , I hold it not fafe to mantain fo great an Armory or Stable, it might cause me, or any other Nobleman to be Tuspected, as the preparing of some Innovation.

I us T. Why fo my Lord, rather to be commended as preparing against

all danger of Innovation

Coun's. It should be fo , but call your observation to accompt, and you shall find it as I fay, for (indeed) such a jealousie hath been held ever since the time of the Civill wars, over the Military greatness of our Nobles, as made them have little will to bend their studies that wayes : wherefore let every man provide according as he is rated in the Muster Book, you understand me.

Iust. Very well my Lord, as what might be replyed in the percei-

ving

fh

vie

be

po

OL

le

th

N

te

viag so much; I have ever (to deal plainly and freely with your Lord-ship) more fear'd at home popular violence, then all the forreine that can be made, for it can never be in the power of any forraigne Prince, without a Papistical party, rather to disorder or endanger his Majesties Estate.

Couns. By this it feems, it is no leffe dangerous for a King to leave the power in the people, then in the

Nobility.

ne ne nd

Ius T. My good Lord, the wifdome of our own age, is the foolishneffe of another , the time prefent ought not to be preferr'd to the policy that was , but the policy that was , to the time prefent ; fo that the power of the Nobility being now withered, and the power of the people in the flower , the care to content them would not be neglected, the way to win them often practized, or at leaft to defend them from oppression. The motive of all dangers that ever this Monarchy hath undergone, should be carefully heeded, for this Maxime hath no posterne , Poteffas bumana vadicatur in voluntatibus bominam. And now my Lord, for King Edward, it is true, though he were not fubject to force

[14]

force, yet was he subject to necessity. which because it was violent, he gave way unto it , Poteffas (faith Pithagoras) juxta necessitatem babitat. And it is true, that at the request of the house he discharged and put from him those before named, which done, he had the greateft gift (but one) that ever be. received in all his dayes (to wit) from every person, man and woman, above the age of four een years 4d. of old mony, which made many Millions of Groats, worth 61. of our mony. This. he had in generall, besides te had of every benificed Prieft, 12d. And of the Nobility and Gen:ry . 1 know not how much, for it is not fet down Now my good Lord , what loft the King by fatisfying the defires of the Patliament Loufe; for affoon as he had the money in purse, he recalled the Lords, and reflored them, and who durft call the King to accompt, when the Affembly were diffolued. Where the word of a King is, there is power (fai h Eccler fiaflicus) who shall fay unte him , what doeft thou! faith the fame Author, for every purpole there is a time and judgement, the King gave way to the time, and his judgement perswaded him to yeeld to necessity, confularing me mio

nomo melior eft quam tempus.

ve

is le e e n e d f

Couns. But yet you fee the King was forc'd to yeeld to their demaunds.

Jus T. Doth your Lordship remember the faying of Monfier de Lange, that he that hath the profit of the war, hath also the honour of the war, whether it be by battaile or retreate, the King you fee had the profit of the Parliament, and therefore she honour. alfo, what other end had the King then to supply his wants, A wife man. hath evermore respect unto his ends : and the King also knew that it was the love that the people bare him, that they urged the removing of those Lords , there was no man among them that foug't himself in that defire, but t'ey all fought the King , as by the successe it appear. ed. My good Lord, hath it not been ordinary in England and in France to yeeld to the demaunds of rebels, did not King Richard the fecond graunt pardon to the outragious rogues and mur herers that followed lack Stram, and Wat Tler, after they had murthered his Chancellor, his Treafurer, Chief luftice, and others, brake open his Exchequer, and committed:

all:

all manner of outrages and villanies, and why did he do it, but to avoid a greater danger: I say the Kings have then yeelded to those that hated them and their estates, (to wit) to pernicious rebels. And yet without dishonour, shall it be called dishonour for the King to yeeld to honest desires of his subjects. No my Lord, those that tell the King those tales, sear their own dishonour, and not the King is supreame, and being guarded by Justice and piety, it cannot receive neither wound nor stain.

Couns. But Sir, what cause have

ment ?

I us T. The same cause that the Earle of Suffolke had in Richard the seconds time, and the Treasurer Fartham, with others, for these great Officers being generally hated for abusing both the King and the Subject, at the request of the States were discharged, and others put in their roomes.

Cou N. And was not this a disho-

nour to the King?

Richard knew that his Grandfather had done the like, and though the

King

King was in his heart utterly against it, yet had he the profit of this exchange; for Suffolke was fined at 20000 markes, and 1000l. lands.

Couns Well Sir , we will fpeak of those that fear the Parliament some other time, but I pray you go on with that, that happened in the troublesome raigne of Richard the fecond who fucceeded, the Grandfather

being dead

da

ve .

m

0-

70

of

at.

.

•

1

e ,

Ius T. That King, my good Lord, was one of the most unfortunate Princes that ever England had , he was cruell, extreame prodigall, and wholly carryed away with his two Minions, Suffolk , and the Duke of Ireland , by whose ill advice and others, he was in danger to have loft his effate; which in the end (being led by men of the like temper) he miscrably loft. But for his subsedies be had given himin his first year being under age two tenths, and two fifteenes: In which Parliament, Alice leirce, who was removed in King Edwards time , with Lancafter , Latimer , and Sturry , were conficare and banished in his second year at the Parliament at Gloceffer , the King had a marke upon every fack of Wooll, and 6d. the pound upon wards.

wards. In his third year at the Patliament at Winchester, the Commons were spared, and a subsedy given by the better fort, the Dukes gave 20 markes, and Earles 6 markes, Bishoppes and Abbors with myters six markes, every marke 3s. 4d. and every Knight, Sussie, Esquire, Shrieve, Perfon, Vicar, & Chaplaine, paid proportionably according to their estates.

COUNS. This me thinks was no.

great matter.

Ius T. It is true my Lord, but a little mony went far in those dayes : I my felf once moved it in Parliament in the time of Queen Elizabeth , who defired much to spare the Common people, & I did it by her Commandement ; but when we cast up the subsedy Books, we found the fumme but fmall , when the 30l. men were left our. In the beginning of his fourth year, a tenth with a fifteen were granted upon condition, that for one whole year no subsedies should be demanded; but this promise was as suddenly forgotten as made, for in the end of that year, the great fubledy of Poll mony was granted in the Parliament at Northampton.

Couns. Yea but there followed

the tetrible Rebellion of Baler, Siram, and others, Leifler, Wrais, and others.

ix

ry

La

-

0

I u s T. That was not the fault of the Parliament my Lord, it is manifest that the subsedy given was not the caufe; for it is plain that the bondmen of England began it , because the were girevoully preft by their Lords in their tenure of Villenage, as alfo for the hatred they bare to the Lawyers and Atturneyes : for the ftory of those times fay, that they deftroved the houses and Minnors of men of Law, & fuch Lawyers as they caught, flew them, and beheaded the Lord chief luftice, which co nmotion being once begun, the head mony was by other Rebels pretended; A fire is often kindled with a little ftraw, which ofcentimes takes hold of greater timber, & confumes the w role building : And that this Rebellion was begun by the discontented flaves (w iereof there have been many in Elder times the like) is minitelt by the charter of Minumifin, which the King granted in hec v rba , Rich. Dei gratid orc. Sciatis quod de gratia softra Spiritueli m inumißimur, &c. to which feeing the King was constrained by force of armes, he revoked the letters Pattents, and



and made them voide, the fame tevocation being strengthened by the Parliament enfuing , in which the King had given him a subsedy upon Woolls, called a Maletot : In the same fourth year was the Lord Treasurer discharged of his Office, and Hales Lord of St. Iohns chosen in his place, in his fift year was the Treasurer again changed, and the Staffe given to Segrave , and the Lord Chancellour was also changed, and the staffe given to the Lord Screepe : Which Lord Scroope was again in the beginning of his fixt year turned off, and the King after that he had for a while kept the Seal in his own hand, gave it to the Bishop of London, from whom it was foon after taken and bestowed on the Earle of Suffolke, who they fay had abused the King, and converted the Kings Treasure to his own use. To this the King condifcended, and though (faith Walfingham) he deferved to loole his life and goods, yet he had the favour to go at liberty upon good fureties, and because the King was but young, & that the reliefe granted was committed to the truft of the Earle of Arundell for the furnishing of the Kings Navy against the French.

Couns.

Couns. Yer you fee it was a diffenour to the King to have his beloved Chancellour removed.

he

ne

et

e,

en

ur

en

rd of

he

25

be

he

is

2-

e-

ut

as of

he

S.

I us T. Truly no, for the King had both his fine 1000l, lands and afubfedy to boot. And though for the prefent it pleased the King to fancy a man all the world hated (the Kings paffion overcomming his judgement) yet it cannot be call'd a difhonour, for the King is to believe the generall counfell of the Kingdome, and to prefer it before his affection , especially when Suffolke was proved to be falle even to the King; for were it otherwise love and affection might be called a frenzie and a madneffe, for it is the nature of humane passions, that the love bred by fidelity, dorh change it felf into hatred, when the fidelity is first changed into falfhood.

Couns. But you fee there were thirteen Lords chosen in the Parliament, to have the overlight of the

government under the King.

I u s T. No my Lord, it was to have the overlight of those Officers, which (faith the story) had imbereled, lewdly wasted, and prodigally spent the Kings Treasure, for to the Commission to those Lords, or to any fix

71

in

N

th

gif

ing

dea

wh

(0)

fhi

Kin

fea

of them, joyn'd with the Kings Counfell, was one of the most royall and most profitable that ever he did, if he had bin constant to himself. But my good Lord, man is the cause of his own milery , for I will repeat the fubstance of the commission granted by the King, and confirmed by Parliament, waich, whether it had bin profitable for the King to have profecuted, your Lord in may judge. The preamble hath these words : Whereas our Sovereigne Lord the King perceiweth by the grievous complaints of the Lords and Commons of this Realme , that the rents, profits, and revenues of this Realme , by the fingular and insufficient Councell and evill government, afwell of Some his late great Officers and others, ort. are fo much withdramen , mafted , given , granted , alienated , deffroyed, and evill difpended, that he is fo much impoperished and void of treasure and goods, and the fubftance of the Crown fo much diminished and deftroyed, that his effate may not honorably be suffained as apper. taineth. The King of his free will at the request of the Lords and Commons, bath ordained William Archbishop of Canterbury and others with his Chancellour, Treasurer, keeper of bis privy feal, to Survey

111-

nd

he

ny

115

b-

by

ia-

0-

fe-

he

re-

ei-

he

hat

bis

180

of

90.

١,

md

00-

ls.

1-

ne

7

be

th

n-

.

20

27

furvey and examine as well the aftate and governance of his bouse, or c. as of all the rents, and profits, and revenues that to him appertaineth, and to be due, or ought to appertain and be due, or c. and all manuer of gifts, grants, alienations and confirmations made by him of lands, tenements, rents, or c. bargained and sold to the pre-pidice of him and his crown, or c. And of his jewels or goods which were his Grandfaiters at the time of his death, or c. and where they be become.

This is in effect the Substance of the commission, which your Lordship may read at large in the book of Statutes, this commission being enacted in the tenth year of the Kings reigne. Now if such a commission were in thefe dayes granted to the faithfull men that have no intereft in the fales, gifts nor purchases , nor in the keeping of the jewells at the Queens death, not in the obtaining , granes of the Kingsbest lands, I cannot fay what may be recovered , and justly recovered; and what fay your Lordhip, was not this a noble aft for the king, if it had been followed to effeet ?

COUNS. I cannot tell whether it were or no, for it gave power to the



Commissioners to examine all the

grants.

Ius T. Why my Lord, doth the King grant any thing, that fhames at the examination? are not the Kings grants on record?

Couns. But by your leave, it is fome dishonour to a King, to have his

judgement called in question.

I us T. That is true my Lord, but in this, or whenfoever the like shall be granted in the future, the Kings judgement is not examined, but their knavery that abused the King. Nay by your favour, the contrary is true, that when a King will fuffer himfelf to be caten up by a company of petty fellows, by himself raised, therein both the judgement and courage is disputed, And if your Lordship will disdain it at your own fervants hands, much more ought the great heart of a King to disdain it. And furely my Lord, it is a greater treason (though it undercreep the law) to tear from the Crown the ornaments thereof: And it is an infallible maxime, that he that loves not his Majesties estate, loves not his person.

Couns. How came it then,

that the act was not executed ?

to



the

the

s at

ings

it is

e his

but

ll be

dge-

ave-

vout

vhen

aten

, by

dge-

nd if

your

ught

in it.

cater

the

01-

in-

oves

t his

hen,

Iust. Because these, againft whom it was granted, perswaded the King to the contrary : as the Duke of Ireland, Suffolk, the chief Iustice Trefilian, and others, yea , that which was lawfully done by the King, and the great Councell of the kingdome, was (by the mastery which Ireland, Suffolk, and Trefilian had over the Kings affections) broken and difavowed. Those that devised to relieve the King, not by any private invention, but by generall Councell, were by a private and partiall affembly adludged traitors, and the most hoself ludges of the land, enforced to subscribe to that judgement. In so much that Judge Belknap plainly told the Duke of Ireland, and the Larl of Suffolk, when he was conftrained to fet his hand, plainly told thefe Lords, that he wanted but a rope, that he might therewith receive a reward for his fubscription. And in this Councell of Nottingham was hatched the mine of those which governed the King, of the ludges by them confrained, of the Lords that loved the King, and fought a reformation, and of the King himself; for though the King found by all the Shrieves of D 2 the

the fhires, that the people would not fight against the Lords , whom they thought to bee most faithfull unto the King, when the Citizens of Lowdon made the fame antwer, being at that time able to arme 50000. men, and rold the Major that they would never fight against the Kings friends, and defenders of the Realme, when the Lord Rath Paffet , who was near the King, rold the King boldly that he would not adventure to have his head broken for the Dake of Irelands plesfure, when the Lord of London told the Earle of Suffelk in the Kings prefence, that he was not worthy to live, &c. yet would the King in the defence of the deftroyers of his chate , lay ambuffies to intrap the Lords, when they came upon his faith, yea when all was pacified, and that the King by his Proclamation had clear'd the Lords , and promifed to produce Inland, Suffolk , and the Archbilhop of Yorke, Trefiltan, and Bramber, to anfwer at the next Parliament , thele fwer at the next Parliament, thele then confest, that they dens not appear; and when suffice fled to callice, and the Duke of Ireland to cheffer, the King caufed an army to be leavied in Laneashire, for the fafe conduct of

the Duke of Ireland to his presence, when as the Duke being encountered by the Lords, ranne like a coward from his company, and fled into Halland. After this was holden a Parliament, which was called that wrought wonders. In the Eleventh year of this King, wherein the fornamed Lords, the Duke of Ireland and the reft, were condemned and confiscate, the Chief Inflice hanged with many others, the aft of the ludges condemned, and hanish, and a 10. and a 15. given to the King.

Couns. But good Sir: the King us first besieged in the Tower of Loudon, and the Lords came to the Patliament, and no man durst contra-

dict them.

dnot

they

unto

Lon-

ng at

men,

rouid

ends,

when

s meat

at he

head

ples

n rold

s pre-

Dive

fence

, lay

when

when

ng by

d the

celn-

10 qor

o an-

thele

ft not

to cal-

Cheffer,

egvied

duft o

I us r. Certainly in raising an army, they committed treason, and though it appear, that they all loved the King, (for they did him no harm, having him in their power) yet our law doth construe all leavying of was without the Kings commission, and all force raised to be intended for the death and destruction of the King, not attending the sequell. And it is so indiged upon good reason, for every unlawfull and ill action is supposed

D 3

to be accompanied with an ill intent. And besides, those Lords used too great cruelty, in procuring the sentence of death against divers of the Kings servants, who were bound to follow and obey their Master and Soveraigne Lord, in that he commanded.

COUNS. It is true, and they were alfo greatly to blame to cause then so many fe conds to be put to death, feeing the principalls, Ireland, Suffelk, and York had escaped them, And what reafon had they to feek to enform the State by firong hand, was not the Kings eftate as dear to himfelf, as to them ? He that maketh-a King know his errour mannerly and private, and gives him the best advice, he is discharged before God and his own conscience. The Lords might have stired themselves, when they law they could not prevail, and have left the King to his own wayes, who had more to lose then they had.

Iusr. My Lord, the taking of Arms cannot be excused in respect of the law, but this might be said for the Lords that the King being under yeares, and being wholly governed by



intent.

d too

fen-

of the

bound

er and

com-

were

hen fo

, fee-

and

r rea-

m the

ot the

asto

know

heis

have

have

ayes,

they

ng of

foed

id for

ed by

thei

faw

their enemies, and the enemies of the kingdome, and because by those evil mens perswasions, it was advised, how the Lords should have been murthered at a feast in London, they were excufable during the kings minority to fland upon their guard against their particular enemies. But we will paffe it over & go on with our parliaments that followed, whereof that of Cambridge in the Kings 12th year was the next, therein the King had given him a 10th and anst', after which being 20. yeares of age rechanged (faith H. Kinghton) his Treasurer, his Chancellour, the Iustices of either bench, the Clerk of the privy seal and others, and took the government into his own hands. He alfo took the Admirals place from the Earl of Arundell, and in his room he placed the Earl of Huntingdon in the yeare following, which was the 13th year of the K. in the Parliament at Westminster there was given to the King upon every fack of wooll 14f. and 6d. in the gound upon other Merchandise,

Couns. But by your leave, the King was restrained this parliament, that he might not dispose of but a third

part of the money gathered.

4 Iust.

211

ift

rea

his

his

all

be

lef

ne

D

I u s T. No my Lord, by your fayour. But true it is that part of this mony was by the Kings confent affigned towards the wars, but yet left in the Lord Treasurers hands, and my Lord it would be a great cafe, and a great faying to his Majeffy our Lord and Mafter, if it pleased him to make his affignations upon fome part of his revenewes, by which he might have Local, upon every tooool, and fave himfelf a great deale of clamour. For feeing of necessity the Navy must be maintained, and that thefe poor men as well Caspenters as thip-keepers muß be paid, it were better for his Majefty to give an affignation to the Treasurer of his Navy for the receiving of fo much as is called ordinary, then todifcontent thole poor men, who being made desperate beggars, may perchance be corrupted by them that lye in wait to defroy the Kings eftate. And if his Majefty did the like in all other payements, especially where the necessity of fuch as are to receive, cannot possible give dayes, his Majefty might then in a little rowle behold his receipts and expences, he mighe quiet his heart when all necessaries were provided for, and then nis of

7

14

is is

7

1

...

1

then dispose the rest at his pleasure. And my good Lord, how excellently and casily mighe this have been done, if the 4000001, had been raised as a foresaid upon the Kings lands, and wards I say that his Majesties House, his May, his guards, his pensioners, his munition, his Ambassadors and all else of ordinary charge might have been described, and a great summe left for his Majesties casuall expenses and rewards, I will not say they were not in love with the Kings estate, but I say they were unforcunately bosone for the King that crost is.

Couns. Well Sir, I would it had been otherwise, But for the affiguments, there are among us that will not wilfingly indure it. Charity begins with it self, shall we hinder our selves of 50000l per annum to save the King 20? No Sir, what will become of our New-years gifts, our presents and gratuities? We can now say to those that have warrants for money, that there is not a penny in the Exchequer, but the King gives it away in the Scots faster then it comes in.

Ius T. My Lord you fay well, at least you fay the truth, that such are

fome of our answers, and hence comes shat generall murmure to all men that have money to receive, I say that there is not a penny given to that nation ; be it for service or otherwise but is spread over all the kingdome : yea they gathernotes, and take copies of all the privy scals and warrants that his Majefty hath given for the money for the Scots, that they may shew them in Parliament. But of his Majesties gifts to the English, there is no bruit shough they may be tenne times as much as the Scots. And yet my good Lord, howfoever they be thus answered that to them fue for money out of the Echequer, it is due to them for 10. or 12. or 20. in the hundred, abated according to their qualities that shew, they are alwaies furnished. For conclusion, if it would please God to put into the Kings heart to make their affignations, it would fave him many a pound, and gain him many a prayer, and a great deal of love, for it grieveth every honest mans heart to fee the abundance which even the petty officers in the Exchequer, and others gather both from the king and fubject, and to fee a world of poore men runne

runne after the King for their ordinary

wages.

nes

hat

ere

s be

cad

24-

the

ic-

the

in

ifts

ruit

25

er-

of

10.

ac-

w,

.00

out

af-

ny

er,

v -

cc

ty

215

b-

n

ne

Couns. Well, well, did you never hear this old tale, that when there was a great contentation about the weather the Seamen complaining of contrary windes, when those of the high Countreys defired rain, and those of the valleys funshining dayes, Inpiter fent them word by Mercury, then, when they had all done, the weather should be as it had been, And it shall ever fall out so with them that complain, the course of payments shall be as they have been, what care we what petty fellows fay? or what care we for your papers? have not we the Kings eares, who dares contest with us ? though we cannot be revenged on fuch as you are for telling the truth, yet upon fome other pretence, wee'le clap you up, and you shall fue to us ere you Nay wee'le make you conget out. fesse that you were deceived in your projects, and eat your own words: learn this of me Sir , that as a little good fortune is better then a great deal of virtue : fo the least authority hath advantage over the greatest wit, was he not the wifest man that faid the bastel-

RAS

mas not the frongest, nor yet bread for the wife, nor riches to men of understanding, nor favour to men of knowledge: but what time and chance came to them all,

fo

fo

fo

Lus T.It is well for your Lordship that it is fo. But Qu: Elizabeth would fet the reason of a mean man , before the authority of the greatest Councellor she had, and by her patience therein the raised upon the usuall and ordinary customes of London without any new imposition above 5000al a year, for though the Treasurer Barleigh , and the Earle of Leicefter and Secretary Walshingham, all three penfioners to Customer Smith , did fet themselves against a poor waiter of the Custome-house called Carmarden, and commanded the groomes of the privy Chamber not to give him acceffe, yet the Queen fent for him, and gave him countenance against them It would not ferve the turn, my Lord, with her; when your Lordinips would tell her, that the difgracing her great officers by hearing the complaints of busie heads, was a dishonour to her felf, but the had alwayes this answer, That if any men complain unjuftly against a Magistrate, it were reafon he should be severely punished, if just-17,

ly, there was one of the final, as well as of the great, and would hear their complaints. For my good Lord, a Prince that suffereth himself to be belieged, for saketh one of the greatest regalities belonging to a Monarchie, to wit, the last appeal, or as the Trench call it, le dernier resert.

Couns. Well Sir, this from the

matter, I pray you go on.

I us T. Then my Lord, in the kings 15. year he had a tenth and a fifteen graunted in Parliament of London. And that same year there was a great Councell called at Stamford to which diverse men yvere sent for, of diverse counties besides the Nobility, of which the King took advice whether he should continue the war, or make a finall end with the French.

Couns. What needed the King to take the advice of any but of his own Councell in matter of peace or

yvarre.

Ius T. Yea my Lord, for it is faid in the Proverbs, where are many counfellers, there is health. And if the King had made the vvarre by a generall confent, the Kingdome in generall vvere bound to maintain the yvarre,



and they could not then fay when the King required aid, that he undertook a needlesse vvarre.

Couns. You fay well, but I pray

you go on

Ius r. After the subsedy in the 15. yeare, the King desired to borrow rooool of the Londoners, which they refused to lend.

COUNS. And yvas not the King

greatly troubled therewith.

Iust. Yeabut the King troubled the Londoners foon aftar, for the king took the advantage of a ryot made upon the Bishop of Salisbury his men, fent for the Major, and other the ablest citizens, comitted the Major to prison in the Castle of Windsor, and others to other castles, and made a LordWarden of this citie, till in the end what with 1000ol. ready money, and other rich presents, instead of lending 1000ol. it cost them 2000l. Betyveen the fifteenth yeare and tvventieth yeare, he had tyvo aides given him in the Parliaments of Winchester and Westminfter : and this later vvas given to furnish the Kings journey into Iteland, to establish that estate which was greatly fhaken fince the death of the

the Kings Grandfather, vvho received thence yearly 30000l. and during the Kings flay in Ireland he had a 10th and a 5th granted.

COUNS. And good reason, for the King had in his army 4000. horse

and 20000. foot.

Ius T. That by your favour, yvas the Kings favity : for great armies do rather devour themselves then destroy enemies. Such an army, (vyhereof the fourth part vyould have conquered all Ireland) vvas in respect of Ireland fuch an army as Xermes led into Greece in this twventieth yeare, vyherein he had a tenth of the Clergy, vvas the great conspiracy of the Kings unkle, the Duke of Glocester, and of Moubrey, Arundell, Nottingham, and Warvvick, the Archbishop of Canterbury and the Abbbot of Westminster, and others who in the one and twentieth yeare of the King were all redeemed by Parliament, and what thinks your Lordship, yvas not this affemble of the 3. states for the kings estate, wherein he so prevailed, that he no onely overthrevy those popular Lords, but besides (the English Chronicle faith, the king fo vyrought and brought things about, that he obtained

the

the power of both houses to be granted to certain persons, to 15. Noblemen and Gentlemen, or to seven of them.

COUNS. Sir, whether the King wrought well or it I cannot judge, but our Chronicles fay, that many things were done in this Parliament, to the displeasure of no small number of people, to wit, for that diverse rightfull heires were disinherized of their lands and livings, with which wrongfull doings the people were much offended, so that the king with those that were about him, and chief in Counsell, came into great infamy & flander.

I u s T. My good Lord, if your Lordship will pardon mee, I am of opinion that those Parliaments wherein the Kings of this land have fatisfied the people, as they have been ever prosperous, so where the King hath restrained the house, the contrary hath happened, for the Kingsarchievments in this Parliament, were the ready preparations to his ruine.

COV. You mean by the generall discontentment that followed, and because the King did not proceed legally with Glocester and others. Why 10

[79]

Sir, this was not the first time that the Kings of England have done things without the Counsell of the land; yes,

contrary to the law.

Ius T. It is true my Lord in Come particulars, as even at this time the Duke of Glocefter was made away at Callice by ftrong hand, without any lawfull triall : for he was a man fobeloved of the people and fo allied, has ving the Dukes of Lancaster, and York his brethren , the Duke of Aumarle, and the Duke of Hereford his Nephewes, the great Earles of Arandell and Warwicke, with diverse other of his part in the confpiency , as the King durft not trie bim according to the law: for at the triall of Arundell and Warwicke, the King was forced to entertaine a petty army about him. And though the Duke was greatly lamented, yet it cannot be denyed but that he was then a traytor to the King And was it not fo my Lord with the Duke of Guife : your Lordship doth remember the sourgald proverb , that necessitie bath no lam : and my good Lord , it is the pradice of doing wrong, and of generall wrongs done, that brings danger, and not where Kings are preft in this or that



that particular, for there is great difference between naturall cruelty and accidentall. And therefore it was Machiavels advice, that all that a King did in that kind , he shall do at once , and by his mercies afterwards make the world know that his cruelty was not affected. And my Lord take this for a generali rule, that the immortall policy of a flate cannot admir any law or priviledge whatfoever, but in fome particular or other, the same is necessarily broken, yea in an Ariffocratia or popular eftate, which vaunts fo much of equality and common right, more outrage hath been committed then in any Chriflian Monarchy.

Couns. But whence came this hatted between the Duke and the

King his Nephew.

Iust. My Lord, the Dukes conftraining the King, when he was young, fluck in the Kings heart, and now the Dukes proud speech to the Kings when he had rendred Brest formerly engaged to the Duke Brittain, kindled again these coales that were not altogether extinguished, for he used these words: Your grate ought to put your body in great pain to winne a strong bold or town by feats of armes, ere you

nd

25

ng

ld

be

te

ge

10

n,

e,

h

e

e

take upon you to fell or deliver any town gotten by the manhood and from hand and policy of your noble progenitors. at, faith the flory, the King changed his countenance, &c. and to fay truth, it was a proud and maisterly speech of the Duke ; belides that inclusively he taxed him of floath and cowardife. as if he had never put himfelf to the adventure of winning fuch a place, undutifull words of a subject do often take deeper root then the memory of ill deeds do : The Duke of Biron found it when the King had him at advantage. Yea the late Earle of Effex told Queen Elizabeth that her conditions was as crooked as her carkaffe: but it cost him his head, which his infurrection had not cost him , but for that speech, who will fay unto a King (faith lob) t'on art wicked. Certainly it is the fame thing to fay unto a Lady, thou are crooked (and perchance more) as to fay unto a King that he is wicked, and to fay that he is a coward, or to use any other words of difgrace, it is one and the fame errour.

Couns. But what fay you for Arundell, a brave and valiant man, who had the

the Kings pardon of his contempt du-

ring his minority.

I us T. My good Lord , the Parliament which you fay disputes the Kings prerogative, did quite contrary , and destroyed the Kings charter and pardon formerly given to Arundell. And my good Lord, do you remember, that at the Parliament that wrought wonders, when these Lords compounded that Parliament, as the King did this, they were fo mercilelle towards all, that they thought their enemies , as the Earle of Arundell most insolently suffered the Qu: to kneel unto him three houres for the faving of one of her fervants, and that scorne of his manebat also mente repaflum. And to fay the truth, it is more barbarous & unpardonable then any act that ever he did to permit the wife of his Soveraign to kneel to him being the Kings vaffell. For if he had faved the Lords servant freely at her first request, as it is like enough that the Qu: would also have faved him, Miseria succurrens paria obtenibis aliquando : For your Lordship fees that the Earle of Warwicke who was as farre in the treason as any of the rest, was pardoned. It was also at this Parlialiament that the Duke of Hereford accufed Monbray Duke of Norfolke, and that the Duke of Hereford Sonne to the Duke of Lancafter, was banished to the Kings confusion, as your Lord-

ship well knows.

201111111111

Couns, I know it well and God knows that the King had then a filly and weak Councell about him, that perswaded him to banish a Prince of the bloud, a most valiant man, and the best beloved of the people, in generall of any man living, especially confidering that the King gave every day more then other offence to his fubjects. For besides that he fined the inhabitants that affifted the Lords in his Minority (of the 17. shires) which offence he had long before pardoned, his blank Charters , and lenting the Realme to farme to meon perfons, by whom he was wholly advised increased the peoples harred towards the preient government.

I'u s r. You say well my L. Princes of an ill deftiny do alwayes follow the worst counsell; or at least imbrace the best after opportunity is lost; one confiliation as fuo cords fed aliens: viribus colliquit, non animo sed auribus cogicium. And this was not the least grief of the subject



in generall, that those men had the greatest part of the spoil of the commonwealth, which neither by virtue, valour or counsell could adde any thing unto it: Nibil est fordidus, nibil crudelius (saith Anto: Pius) quamsi Remp. is arrode, qui nibil in eam suo labore conferent.

COUNS. Indeed the letting to farm the Realm was very grievous to

de

pr

N

en

co

to

hi

to

by

kn

vei

de

WO

tou

wh

nef

the subject.

Ius r. Will your Lordship pardon me if I tell you that the letting to farm of his Majesties Customes (the greatest revenue of the Realm) is not very pleasing.

COUNS. And why I pray you, doth not the King thereby raile his profits every third yeare, & one farmer outbids another to the Kings advantage

Ius r. It is true my Lord, but it grieves the subject to pay custome to the subject, for what mighty men are those Farmers become, and if those Farmers get many thousands every yeate, as the world knows they do, why should they not now (being men of infinite wealth) declare unto the King upon oath, what they have gained, and henceforth become the Kings collectours of his Custome, did not Queen

Queen Elizabeth who was reputed both a wife and just Princesse, after the had brought Customer Sm th from 14000l. a yeare to 42000l. a yeare, made him lay down a recompence for that which he had gotten ? and if thefe Farmers do give no recompence, let them yet present the King with the truth of their receivings and profits. But my Lord for conclusion, after Bullingbrook arriving in England with a small troop : Notwithstanding the King at his Landing out of Ireland, had a sufficient and willing army : yet he wanting courage to defend his right gave leave to all his Souldiers to depart, and put himfelf into his hands that caft him into his grave.

Couns. Yet you fee be was de-

pos'd by Parliament.

I us r. Aswell may your Lordship say he was knock't in the head by Parliament, for your Lordship knows that if King Richard had ever escaped out of their singers that deposed him, the next Parliament would have made all the deposers traitours and Rebels, and that justly. In which Parliament, or rather unlawfull assembly, there appeared but one honest man, to wit, the B. of Carlile, who fooned



fcomed his life, and estate, in respect of right and his allegiance, and defended the right of his Soveraigne Lord against the Kings elect and his parrakers.

COUNS. Well I pray goe on with the Parliaments held in the time of his fucceffor Henry the fourth.

Ius r. This King had in his third year a subledy, and in his fife a tenth of the Clergy without a Parliament; In his fixt year he had fo great a subsedie, as the House required there might be no record thereof left to posterity, for the House gave him 20% of every Knights Fee, and of every 201. land , 20d. and 12d. the pound of goods.

Couns. Yea in the end of this year, the Parliament preft the King to annex unto the Crown all temporall poffessions belonging to Churchmen within the land, which at that time, was the third foot of all England. But the Bishops made friends , and in

the end faved their effates.

Ius r. By this you fee, my Lord, that Crommell was not the fielt that thought on fuch a bulinefs. And if King Henry the 8. had referved the Abbeyes, and other Church lands, which he had

given

rev

ha

and

mo

Cle

grat

Ric

mov

y g

and.

back

Siz ?

mur

Succi

that t

hip,

he K

nd I

ufts,

othe

Lario

Iu

given at that time, the revenue of the Crown of England, had exceeded the revenue of the Crown of Spaine, with both the Indies, whereas used as it was, (a little enriched the Crown) served but to make a number of pettifoggers, and other gentlemen.

Couns. But what had the King

in fleed of this great revenue

ca

le-

nè

is

on

ne

rd

th

in

e, ht

i-

of

J.

of

16

g

-

1-

ıt

l.

n

t

5

I us r. He had a 15th of the Commons, and tenth, and a half of the Clergy, and with all, all penfions gaunted by King Edward, and King Ritherd were made void. It was allo moved that all Crown lands formerby given (at least given by King Edw: and King Richard) should be taken back.

Couns. What think you of that, is: would it not have been a dishoour to the King? and would not his successors have done the like to those

that the King had advanced ?

In s.r. I cannot answer your Londhip, bur by diffinguishing, for where
we kings had given land for services,
and had not been over reached in his
jits; there it had been a diffionous
one king, to have made vaid the
gaunts of his prederessors, or his
pauers, but all those graums of the
Kings,



Kings , wherein they were deceived ? the very custome and policy of England makes them voyd at this day.

he h

klu

his A

deir

many

red

TOV

ono

C

many

once

Iu

e ne

e fr

Co.

hick

lust

reat

fwa

fure

ere

ne

Co e Ki

Iu:

ere i

erce

a al

tol

Couns. How mean you that, for his Majestie hath given a great deal of Land among us fince he came into England, and would it frand with the K. honour to take it from us again.

Ius T. Yea my Lord, very well with the Kings honour, if your Lordthip, or any Lord elfe, have under the name of 1 ool.land a year, gotten 300l. land, and fo after that rate.

Couns. I will never believe that his Majesty will ever doe any such thing.

I u s T. And I believe as your Lordthip doth , but we spake e're while of those that disswaded the King from calling it a Parliament: And your Lordinip asked me the reason, why any man should distwade it, or fear aft of it, to which, this place gives me an opportunity to make your Lordining anlwer, for though his Majefty wil of himself never question those grants yet when the Commons shall make humble petition to the King in Par liament, that it will please his Majeft to affift them in his relief , with tha which ought to be his own, which, if i will please his Majesty to yeild anto

[89]

dehouse will most willingly furnish of ksupply the rest, with what grace can ay. Is Majesty deny that honest suit of teirs, the like having been done in many Kings times before? This promding may goodLord, my perchance nove all your phrases of the Kings onour, false English.

Coun s. But this cannot concern any, and for my felf, I am fure it

rdthe

for

cal

nto

the

rell

ol. Iu s-T. It is true my Lord, & there mnot many that diffwade his Maje-

his lefrom a Parliament.

ng. Co.But they are great ones, a few of rd-hich will ferve the turn wel enough.

of lust, But my Lord, be they never fo of just. But my Lord, be they never to om stat (as great as Gyants) yet if they but ilwade the King from his ready and they fured way of his subsistence, they are device how the K. may be else an here supplied, for they otherwise in me into a dangerous fortune.

ts King needs no great diffwalion. ke lust. My Lord, learn of me, that ke is none of your all, than can fi me the King. It is an effentiall pro-my of a manatuely wife, not to o-fi mall the boxes of his bolome, even to those that are near'ft & dear'ft unto



him, for when a man is discovered to the the very bottome, he is after the leffe fer esteemed. I dare underrake , that ket when your Lordfhip harh feryed the rea King twice twelve years more, you he will find, that his Majeffy hath refer-of ved somewhat beyond all yourcapa-cities, his Majeffy hath great reason his to put off the Parliament, ar his laft 64 refuge, and in the mean time, rouls make tryall of all your loves to ferre kin him, for his Majefly hath had good experience, how well you can ferre your felves: But when the King finds in that the building of your own for to tunes and factions, hath been the die on ligent fludies , and the fervice of his air Majefty, but the exercises of your lea-fures: He may then perchance the cast himself upon the general! love die of his people, of which (I must) he dy shall never be deceived , and leave be as many of your Lordfrips as have pe pilfered from the Crown, to their exambe mination.

Couns. Well Sir, I take no grea to pleasure in this dispute, goe on los pray.

fus T. In that Kings 5th year, he had also a subsectly, which is got by hi holding the house together from Ea got



ed to tet to Christmas, and would not suf-lesse set them to depart. He had also a sub-that sky in his ninth year. In his eleventh the year the commons did again prefie you the King to take all the temporalities refer of the Church men into his hands, appear ich they proved sufficient to maintain min 150. Earls, 1500. Knights, and laft 6400. Efquiers, with a hundred bofpirouls, but they not prevailing, gave the ferve king a fubledy.

good As for the notorious Prince, Benry ferre the fife, I find, that he had given him finds, in his fecond year 300000. markes, for and after that two other subsedies, re differe in his fifth year, another in his

of his ginth, without any disputes.

Ea fte

rica In the time of his successor newy and the fixt, there were not many subsection dies. In this third year, he had a subsection dy of a Tunnage and poundage. And eave here (faith John Stom) began those have payements, which we call customes, exa because the payement was continued, whereas before shat time it was granor rording to the Kings occasions. He had also an ayde & garbering of mohe ney in his fourth your sand tielike inbe his tenth year, and in his chisteenth year a i grh He had alfo a fifte mith for



we

wh

Ki

tin

ou

1001

hir

gar

lac

do

Go

co

fer

W

m

lo

fo

P

ti

la

th

t!

fu

t

the conveying of the Queen out of France into England. In the twenty eight year of that King was the act of Resumption of all honours, towns, castles, Signeuries, villages, Manors, lands, tenements, rents, reversions, sees, &c. But because the wages of the Kings servants, were by the strictness of the act also restrained, this act of Resumption was expounded in the Parliament at Reading the 3 th year of the Kings reigne.

of Resumption were ordinary in former times; for King Stephen resumed the lands, which in former times is had given to make friends during the Civill wars. And Henry the second resumed all (without exception) which King Stephen had not resumed; for although King Stephen took back a great deal, yet he suffered his trustifiest servants to enjoy his gift.

Ius r. Yes my Lord, and in after times also; for this was not the last, not shall be the last, I hope. And judge you my Lord, whether the Patliaments doe not only serve the King, whatsoever is said to the contrary; for as all King Henry the 6 gifts & graunt,



ut of

venty

act of

Was

nors.

ons

fth

tnef

to f

the

year

for-

ned

the

bac

(ne

d :

ook

red

his

15

A,

ge

or or

te

were made void by the Duke of Tork when he was in pollection of the Kingdomeby Parliament. So in the time of K. H. when K. Edm, was beaten out again , the Parliament of Wellminster made all his acts voyd, made him and all his followers traytors, and gave the King many of their heads & lands. The Parliaments of England do alwayes ferve the King in poffeffion. It ferved Rich. the fecond to condemne the popular Lords. It ferved Bollingbrooke to depose Rich. When Edw. the 4. had the Scepter, it made them all beggars that had followed H. the 6. And it did the like for H. when Edw. was driven out. The Parliaments are as the friendih ip of this world is , which alwayes followeth prosperity. For King Edw. the 4. after that he was possessed of the Crown, he had in his 13. year a subsedy treely given him : and in the year following he took a benevolence through England, which arbitrary taking from the people, ferved that ambitious traytor the Duke of Bucks. After the Kings death was a plausible argument to perfwade the multitude , that they should not permit (laith Sir

Thomas Moore) his line to raigne any longer upon them.

Couns. Well Sir, what fay you to the Parliament of Rebard the third

his time ?

I u s T. I find but one, and therein he made diver e good Laws. For king Henry the leventh in the beginning of his third year he had by Parliament an ayde granted unto him, towards the relief of the Duke of Irinain, then affailed by the French King. And although the King did not enterimo the warre , but by the advice of the three effaces, who did willingly contribute : Yet those Northern men which loved Richard the third, raifed rebellion under colour of the money impos'd, and murthered the Earle of Northumberland whom the King employed in that Collection. By which your Lordship fees , that it harh not been for taxes and impolitions alone, that the iff disposed have taken Armes ; bur even for chofe payments which have been appointed by Parliament.

Couns. And what became of

Ius T. They were fairly hang'd, athe money levied notwirhstanding



m

at M

K

CE

fp

u

m

A

any

you ird

rem

ing

of

ent rds

ien

Ito

he

n-

en

rd

ry

of

n-

h

ot

e,

n

f

in the Kings first year he gathered a. marvailous great maffe of money, by abenevolence, taking pattern by this and of levie from Edw. 4th. But the King caused it first to be moved in Parliament where it was allowed, becaufe the poorer fort were therein fpared. Yet it is true that the King used some art , for in his Letters he declared that he would measure every mans affections by his gifts. In the thirteenth year he had also a subsedy, whereupon the Cornish men took Armes , as the Northern men of the Bishoprick had done in the third year of the King.

Couns. It is without example, that ever the people have rebelled for any thing granted by Parliament, fave in this Kings dayes.

Tus T. Your Lordship must confider, that he was not over much beloved, for he rook many advantages. upon the people and the Mobility: both.

Couns. And I pray you what: fay they now of the new impositions lately laid by the Kings Majesty? do they fay that they are justly or unjustly laid ? E.S.

Im S.T.

off

W

fai

30

01

ce

be

le

16

fo

d

m

je

I us r. To Impole upon all things brought into the Kingdome is very ancient : which impoling when it hath been continued a certain time, is then called Custo nes, because the subjects are accustomed to pay it, and yet the great taxe upon wine is ftill called Impost, becauseit was imposed after the ordinary rate of payement, had lasted many years. But we do now a dayes understand those things to be impolitions, which are railed by the command of Princes, without the advice of the Common-wealth, though (as brake it) much of that which is now called cuftome, was ar the first imposed by Prerogative royall : Now whether it be time or confent that ma. kes them juft, I cannot define, were they just because new, and not justified yet by ti ne, or unjust because they want a generall confent; yet is this rule of Ariffoile verified in respect of his Majeftic : Minm timent bomines in justum pati à principe quem cultorem Dei putant. Yea my Lord, they are also the more willingly borne, because all the world knows they are no new Invention of the Kings. And if those that adviced his Majestie to impose them,

Insr.

. . .

ach

en

As

he

£3

er

ad

14

oc

10

d-

t A

c

them, had raifed his lands (as it was offered them) to 200001 more then it was, and his wards to asmuch as aforefaid, they had done him farre more acceptable fervice. But they had their own ends in refusing the one, and accepting the other. If the land had been raifed, they could not have felefted the best of it for themselves: If the impolitions had not been laid, fome of them could not have their filks, other pieces in farme, which indeed grieved the fubject ten times more then that which his Majestie enjoyeth. But certainly they made a great advantage that were the advifers, for if any tumult had followed his Majesty, ready way had been to have delivered them over to the people.

Couns. But think you that the King would have delivered them if any troubles had followed?

Iusr. I know not my Lord, it was Machiavels counsell to Cafar Borgisto doe ir, and King H. the 8.delivered up Empfon and Dulley: yea the same King, when the great Cardinall Woolfey, who governed the King.

King and all his cflate, had (by requiring the fixt past of every mans goods for the King) raised a sebellion, the King I fay difavowed him abfalutely, shat had not the Dukes of Norfolk and Suffolk appealed the people, the Cardinall had fung no more Maffe: for thefe are the words of our Story : The King then came to Welminster to the Cardinals Palace, and affembled there a great Councell , in which he prosefted , that his mind was verer to make my thing of his commons which might found to the breach of his Laurs. Wherefore he then willed them to know by whose means they were so Gridly given forth. Now my Lord, how the Cardinall would have thifted bimfelf, by faying , 1. bad the apinion of the Indges , had not the rebellion been appealed, I greatly doubt.

Couns. But good Sir, you blanch my question, and answer me by examples. I aske you whether or no in any fich tumule, the people pretending against any one or two great Officers, the King fould deliver them, or defend them !

Iust. My good Lord, the people have not flayed for the Kings delivery.





neither in England, nor in France : Your Lordinip knows how the Chancellour. Treasurer, and Chief Juffice, with many others at feverall times have been uled by the Rebels: And the Marshals, Conflables, and Treasurers in France. have been cut in pieces in Charles the fixe his time. Now to your Lordinips preftion, I fay that where any man shall give a King perilons advice, as may either cause a Rebellion, or draw the peoples love from the King, I fay, that a King shall be advised to banish him : But if the King do absolutely command his servant to do anything difpleating to the Common-wealth, and to his own perill, there is the King bond in honour so defend him. But any good Load for conclusion, there is no man in England that will lay any invention ether guevous or against law upon the Kings Majory : and sheetfore your Londfhips muft there it amongft you.

hc c:

ed

he

rto

ich

ps.

60

d,

ft-

pi-

ch

m-

ny

Count. Formy part, I had no hand in it, (Inbink) Ingram was to that propounded it so the Treasurer.

In s T. Alas, my good Lord, every poor waiter in the Custome house, or every promoter might have done it, there is no invention in these things.

To

To lay impositions, and fell the Kings lands, are poor and common devices: It is true that Ingram and his fellows. are odious men, and therefore his Majefty pleas'd the people greatly to put him from the Coffership. It is better for a Prince to use such a kind of men, then to countenance them, hangmen are necessary in a common wealth : yet in the Netherlands, none but a hangmans fonne will marry a hangmans daughter. Now my Lord, the last gathering which Henry the leventh made; was in his twentieth year, wherein he had another benevolence both of the Clergy and Laity, a part of which taken of the poorer fort, he ordained by his restament that it should be reflored. And for King Honry the eight, although he was left in a most plentifull estate, yet he wonderfully prest his people with great payments , for in the beginning of his time it was infinite that he spent in Masking and Tilting, Banquetting, and other vanities, efore he was entred into the most confuming expence of the most fond and fruitleffe warre that ever King undenook. In his fourth yeare he had one of the greatest subsedies that ever

was granted; for belides two fifecens and two diffnes, he used Devids Law of Capitation or head money, and had of every Duke ten marks, of every Earl five pounds, of every Lord four pounds, of every Knight four marks and every man rated at \$1. in goods, 4. marks, and fo after the rate : yea every man that was valued but at 401 paid 12d, and every man and woman above 15. yeares 4d. H: had also in his fixt yeare divers subsedies granted him. In his fourteenth their was a tenth demanded of every mans goods, bue it was moderated, In the Parliament following, the Clergie gave the King the half of their spiritual livings for one yeare, and of the Laity there was demanded \$00000l, which could not be leavied in England, but it was a marvellous great gift that the king had given him at that time. In the Kings leventeenth yeare was the Rebellion before spoken of, wherein the King disavowed the Cardinall : In his seventeenth yeare he had the tenth and fifreenth given by Parliament, which were before that time paid to the Pope. And before that al-To, the moneys that the King borrowed

in his fifteenth yeare were forgiven him by Parliament in his feventeenth yeare. In his 35. yeare a fubfedy was granted of 4d. the pound of every man worth in goods from 20f. to 51, from 31. to 1.01. and upwards of every pound 2f. And all ftrangers, denilens. and others doubled this Tumme. frangers not being inhabitants above 16. yeares 4d.a head. All that had Lands, Fees, and Annuities, from 20. 10 5. and fo double as they did for goods : And the Clergy gave od, the pound. In the thirty feventh yeare, a Benevolence was taken not voluntary, but rated by Commissioners, which because one of the Aldermen refused to pay, he was fent for a fouldier into Scotlond. He had allo another great fuble dy of fix thillings the pound of the Clergy, and two hillings eight pence of the goods of the Lairy, and four fhillings the pound upon Lands.

In the second yeare of Edward the fixt, the Parliament gave the King an aid of twelve pence the pound of goods of his Naturall subjects, and iwo shillings the pound of strangers, and this to continue for three yeares, and by the statute of the second and third of Edward the sixt, it may appear.

the:

in

pa

Ot

t' e same Parliament did also give a lecond aid, as followeth, (to wir) of every Ewe kept in feverall pastures, 3d : of every weather kept as aforefaid 2d :of every theep kept in t e Common, 1d. ob. T e House gave the King also 8d. the pound of every woollen cloath made for the fale t roughout England for three years. In the t ird and fourt of t e King, by reason of the troublefome garhering of the poly money upon theep, and therak upon cloats, this act of fubfedy was repeal'd, and other relief given the King, and in the feventh yeare he had a subfedy and two fifteens.

In the first yeare of Queen Many, tunnage and poundage were granted. In the second yeare a subsedy was given to King Philip, and to the Queen, she had also a third subsedy in Annis 4.

05.

Eliz. Reg, Now my Lord, for the Parliaments of the late Queens time, in which there was nothing new, neither head money, nor fheep money, nor escuage, nor any of these kinds of payments was required, but onely the ordinary subsedies, and those as easily graunted as demanded, I shall not need to trouble your Lordship with any



ny of them, neither can I inform your Lordship of all the passages and acts which have passed, for they are not

extant, nor printed.

Couns. No, it were but time lost to speak of the latter, and by those that are already remembred, we may judge of the rest, for those of the greatest importance are publick. But I pray you deal freely with me, what you think would be done for his Majesty, If he should call a Parliament at this time, or what would be required at his Majestics hands?

I us r. The first thing that would be required, would be the same that was required by the Commons in the thirteenth yeare of Hen. the eight (to wit) that if any man of the commons house should speak more largely, then of duty he ought to do, all such offences to be pardoned, and that to be of record.

nion speak of the King what they lift.

lus r. No my Lord, the reverence which a Vassall ower to his Soveraigne, is alwaies intended for every speech, howsoever it must import the good of the King, and his estate, and so long it may be easily pardoned, otherwise

therwise not; for in Queen Blizabishs time, who gave freedome of speech in all Parliaments, when Wentsorth made those motions, that were but supposed dangerous to the Queens estate, he was imprisoned in the Tower, notwithstanding the priviledge of the house, and there died.

Couns. Want fay you to the Sci-

liament !

ıt

it

e take

lust. I fay, he repented him heartily that used that speech, and indeed belides than it was feditious, this example held not : The Prench in Seitily usurped that Kingdome, they neither kept law nor faith, they took away the inheritance of the Inhabitants, they took from them their wives, and ravished their daughters, committing all other infolencies that could be imagined. The Kings Majefly is the Naturall Lord of England, his Vaffals of Scotland obey the Englifh Laws, if they break them, they are punished without respect. Yea. his Majesty put one of his Barons to a thamefull death, for being contenting onely to the death of a Common Fencer: And which of thefe ever did of dutit committany outrage in England, but



packing the last, was the course of the contention and disorder that happened.

Couns. Why fir? do you not think it best to compound a Parliament of the Kings servants and others, that shall in all obey the Kings defires?

1 us r. Certainly no, for it hathnewer succeeded well, neither on the kings part, nor on the subjects, as by the Parliament before-remembred your Lordship may garher, for from such a composition do arise all jealousies, and all contentions. It was practized in clder times, to the great trouble of the kingdome, and to the loffe and ruine of many. It was of lamer sime used by King Hony the eight, but every way to his difadvantage. When the King leaves himfelf to his people, they affure themfelves that they are truffed and beloved of their king, and there was never any affembly fo barborus, as not to answer the love and trust of their King. Henmy the firt when his efface was in effect unterly overthrown, and utterly impoverified at the humble sequest of his Trealmer made the fame known to the House : Or other wife, using the Treasurers own words. He humbly defired fired the King to take his Staffe, that

he might fave his wardship.

C ou n s. But you know, they will prefently be in hand with t afe impofitions, which the King hath laid by his

own Royall Prerogative.

lust. Perchanee not my Lord; but rather with these impositions that have been by fome of your Lordships laid upon the King, which did not forme of your Lordstrips fear more then you do the impolitions laid upon the Subjects, you would never diffwade his Majefty from a Parliament: For no man doubted, but that his Majefly was advised to lay those impelitions by his Councell , and for particular t ings on which they were laid, the advice came from peny fellows (though now great ones) belonging to the Cuftome-House. Now my Lord, what prejudice hash his Majesty (his Revenue being kept upy if the impositions that were laid by the generall Councell of the Kingdome, which takes off all grudging and complaint.

Couns. Yes Sir, but the which is done by the Ring, with the advice of his private or privy Councell, is done

by the Kings ablolute power.

I us T. And by whose power is is done



done in parliament, but by the Kings absolute power? Mistake it not my Lord: The three Estates do but advife, as the privy Councell doth, which advice if the King imbrace, it becomes the Kings own Act inthe one, and the Kings Law in the other, for without the Kings acceptation, both the publick and private advices be but as empty Egg shels : and what doth Lis Majesty lole if some of those things, which concerns the poorer fort to be made free again, and the Revenue kept up upon that which is superfluous? Is it a loffe to the King to be beloved of the Commons? If it be revenue which the King feeks, is it not better to take it of those that laugh, then of those that cry? Yea if all be conten to pay upon moderation & change of the Species: Is it not more honourable and more fafe for the King, that the Subject pay by perswasion, then to have them confrained ? If they be contented to whip. themselves for the King, were it not better to give them the Rod into their hands, thento commit them to the Executioner? Certainly it is farre more bappy for a Soveraigne Prince, that a Subject open his purfe willingly, then that the same be opened by violence.

cx

fo

T

Besides, that when impositions are laid by Parliament, they are gathered by the authority of the Law, which (as aforesaid) rejecteth all complaints, and stoppeth every mutinous mouth: Its shall ever be my prayer that the King embracethe Councel of Honour and safety, and let other Princes imbrace that of force.

Couns. But good Sir, it is his Prerogative which the King stands upon, & it is the Prerogative of the Kings, that the Parliaments do all diminish.

Iust. If your Lordship would pardon me, I would fay then, that your Lordships objection against Parliaments is ridiculous. In former Parliaments three things have been supposed dishonour of the King. The first, that the Subjects have conditioned with the King, when the King hath needed them, to have the great Charter confirmed : The fecond, that the Effates have made Treasurers for the necessary and profitable disburling of those fums by them given, to the end, that the Kings, to whom they were given, should expend them for their own defence, & for the defence of the Common-wealth The third, that thefe have preft the King to discharge some great Officers of the



Crown and to elect others. Astouching the first my Lord, I would fain learn what difadvantage the Kings of this Land have had by confirming the great Charter, the breach of which have ferved onely men of your Lord-Thips rank, to affif their own pallions, and to puniff and imprison at t ein own discretion the Kings poor Subjeds. Concerning their privare hatred, with the colour of the Kings fervice, for the Kings Majestic take no mans inheritance, (as I have faid before) nor any mans life, but the Law of the Land, according to the Charten. Neither doth his Majefly imprilon any man (matter of practice, which concerns, the prefervation of his cliate excepted) but by the law of the land. And yet he uleth his prerogative as all the Kings of England have ever used it: for the supream reason cause to prafile many things without the advice of the law. As infuncctions and rebellions, it ufech the maishall a and not the common law, without any breach of the Charter, the iment of the Charter confidered eruely. Neither hath amy Subject made complaint, or been gueved, in that the Kings of this land, for their own fafeties, and preferration of

L

£

St

m

tis

La

PO

an

har

Pa

opar

in

PCE

vile

tion

of their effates have pled their Prerogarives, the great Enligne, on which there is written feli Dee And my good Lord , was not Buckingham in England, and Byren in France condemned, their Peers uncalled ! And withall was not liyeen utterly (contrary to the cultams & priviledges of the French) denyed an advocate to affift his defence ? for where lawes foresaft cannot provide remedies for future dangers & Princes are forced to allift themselves by their Prerognives. But that which hathbeen ever grievous , and the cause of many troubles, very dangerous is that your Lordings shuling the resions of flate, do punish and imprisonthe K. Subjects at your pleasure. It is you my Lords, that when Subjects have fometimes need of the Kings prorogative, do shen wie the flrength of the Law, and when they require the law, you afflich them with the presognive. and tread the great Charces (which harh been confirmed by 16. Acts of Parliament) underwour feetas actorn

Gouses, Good Situshic, afas do in this too breek the great Chamer 3 perchance you mean, that we have advifed the King to day she new impoli-

tions.

h-

0

of

c

h

1

S.

ix

.

- wo he

1

l:

.

.

1

۱

In s.T. No my Lord: there is noting in the great Charter against impositions: and besides that, necessity doth personal them. And if necessity there do in somewhat excuse a private man a fortiori, it may then excuse a Prince. Again the Kings Majesty hath profit and increase of revenue by the impositions. But there are of your Lordships (contrarie to the direct Letters of Ethe Charter) that imprison the Kings who subjects and deny them the benefit of the Law, to the Kings disprosir. And what do you otherwise thereby (if the well impositions be in any fort grievous) but Renovare dolares? And with all digg out of the dust the long buried memorie of the Subjects former intentions with their Kings.

Couns. What mean you by that? the I us r. I will tell your Lordship when I dare, in the mean time it is enough for me, to put your Lordship the in mind, that all the Estates in the is the World, in the offence of the people, have either had profit or necessity to by perswade them to adventure it, of the which, if neither be urgent, and yet the Subject exceedingly grieved, your Lordship may conjecture, that the House will be humble suitors for a redresse. And if it be a Maxime in policy on



indifferent, and never suffer them to be first beaten, but for the Kings benefit (for fitty there are no blows forgotten with the man smart but those) then I say to make them Vassals to Vassals, is but to batter of them Vassals to Vassals, is but to batter of them Vassals to Vassals, is but to batter of the Wassals to Vassals, is but to batter of the Wassals to Vassals, is but to batter of the Wassals to Vassals, is but to batter of the Wassals to Vassals to Vassals to the fortified by his order of the Wassals were brought to depending upon the King alone. Yea my good to Lord, our late dear Soveraign Q. Eliv. Indicate them up, & to their advantage, as the welterpaired as ever Prince did Desendens) me, & spend me, faith the Irish Churle.

igg Couns. Then you think that this me-violent breach of the Charter will be the cause of seeking the conformation of it in the next Parliament, which on the cause of the could never have him moved.

of it in the next Parliament, which onat? therwise could never have bin moved. hip I us T. I know not my good Lord seperchance not, for if the House presse hip the King to graunt unto them all that the is theirs by the Law, they cannot (in ple, lustice) refuse the King all that is nisy to by the Law. And where will be the if of sue of such a contention? I dare not the divine, but sure I am that it will tend out to the prejudice both of the King and the Subject.

re- Couns. If they dispute not their licy own liberties, why thould they then to F. 2 dispute.

the Kings liberties , which we call his Prerogative.

Iust. Among for many and for divers Spirits, no man can foretell what may be propounded; but howfoever, if the matter be not flightly handled on the Kings behalf, thefe disputes will foon diffolve for the King hath fo linthe need of his Preregarive, & fo great advantageby the lower, as thefear of impering the one, re with the Prerogative, is forimpossible; and the burthen of the other, to wie, the Law, fo weightt, as but by a branch of the Kings Prerogative, namely, of his remission and pardon, the Subject is no way able toundergo it. This my Lord is no matter of flourish that I have faid but it is the truth, and unanswerable.

Cours. But to execute the Laws very feverely avoid be very grievous.

In s v. Why my Lord, are the Laws guevous which our felves have required of our Kings: And are the Prerequired of our Kings: And are the Prerequired to themselves also grievous! Howeah such a people then be well pleased and if your Lordship confess that the Laws give too much, why does your Lordship urge the Preregative that gives more is Nay I will be old to say it, that except the Laws.



2

n

20

Ω

W

were better observed, the Prerogative of a Religious Prince hath manifold leffe perils then the Letter of the Law hath. Now my Lord, for the fecond & third, to wit, for the appointing of Treasurers, and removing of Councellors , our Kings have evermore laught them to fcorn that have preft either of thefe,& after the Parliament diffolyed, took the money of the Treas furers of the Parliament and recalled & restored the Officers discharged, or elfe they have been contented, that fome such persons should be removed at the request of the whole Kingdom, which they themselves out of their Noble natures, would not feem willing to remove.

Couns. Well Sir, Would you notwithstanding all these arguments advise his Majesty to call a Parlia-

we advise

118

li.

at

er.

ed.

ill

ir-

of

cn cn

gs.

on de

no bt

173

te.

we

153

ell

10-

be

res

ere

I us T. It belongs to your Lordfhips who enjoy the Kings favour, &
are chosen for your able wisedome to
advise the K. It were a strange boldnesse in a poor and private person, to
advise Kings, attended with so understanding a Councell. But be like your
Lorpships have conceived some other
way, how money may be gotten otherwise. If any trouble should happen,

3

your Lordship knows, that then there were nothing so dangerous for a K. as to be without money: A Pathament cannot assemble in haste, but prosent dangers require hasty remedies. It will be no time then to discontent the subjects by using any unordinary wages.

Couns. Well Sir, all this notwithflanding we dare not advice the King to call a Parliament, for if it should succeed ill, we that advice, should fall into the Kings difference. And if the King be driven into any extremity, we tan say to the King that because we found it extremely appleasing to his Majesty to hear of a Parliament, we thought it no good manners to make

fuch a motion.

Iws T. My Lord; to the first len me tell you, that there was never any just Prince that hath taken any advantage of the successes of Councels, which have been founded on reason. To fear that, were to fear the loss of the bell, more then the loss of the scene, and were also the way to beat all mon from the studies of the Kings service. But for the second, where you say you can excuse your felves upon the Kings own protesting against a Parliamont, the King upon better consideration may encounter that singues of yours.

ıŧ

11

,

6,

1-

かける

ı¢

2

re is

ec ce

ne

ar II,

ad on

ce.

04

gs

. 70

166. L.S.

COUNS. How I pray you? Inst. Even by declaring himself to be indifferent, by calling your Lord. thins together, and by delivering unto you that he heares how his loving fub. jects in generall are willing to lupple him, if it please him to call a Parliament, for that was the common anfwer to all the Sheaffer in England, wien the late benovalence was commanded. In which respect, and because you come fart in all your projects, de because it is a thing mast dangerous for a King to be without treasure he requires fues of you, as either millite. or rather fear a Parliment, to fetilown your realous in writing, wair's you sither mill-ked, or feared it. And fuch as with and delire it, to fet down an-Swers to your objections : And to thall tic King prevent the calling or not calling on ais Majolty , as fome of your great Councellers have done in many other things thrinking up tooir shoulders and laying, the K. will have in fo.

Com as . Well Sir, it grows late & Lwill bid you ferwell, onely you had sake well with you this advice of mine, ahat in all trangou have faid against our greatest, those meninahe and shall be your sudges in a seintoun cause you

that trouble your felf with reformation, are like to be well rewarded hereof you may affure your felf, that we will never allow of any invention how profitable foever, unlesse it proceed, or feem to

proceed from our felves.

lus r. If then my Lord, we may prefume to fay that Princes may be unhappy in any thing, certainly they are un rappy in nothing more then in fuffering themselves to be so inclosed. A. gain, if we may believe Plmy, who tels us, that 'tis an ill figne of profperity inany kingdome or flate, where fuca as descrive well, find no other recompence then the contentment of their own confeiences, a farre worfe figne is it where the juftly accused shall take revenge of the just accuser. But my good Lord, there is this hope remaining, that feeing he hath been abused by them he trufted moft, he will not for the future dishonour of his judgement (so well informed by his own experience) as to expose such of his vallals as have had no other motives to ferve him, then simply the love of his person and his eflate) to their revenge, who have onely been moved by the love of their own fortunes, and their glory.

Couns. But good Sir, the King hath not been deceived by all. Iusr.



I us r. No my Lord, neither have all been trusted, neither doth to eworld accuse all, but believe, that there be as mong your Lordships very just and worthy men, aswell of the Nobility an others, but those though most honoured in the Common wealth, yet have not been most imployed: Your Lordship knows it well enough to bear up alone the weighered assert though a your hands strong enough to bear up alone the weighered assert the Gommon wealth, and strong enough, all the Land have found thom to heat down whom they pleased.

Cours. I understand you but how fisallit appear that they have onely

fought themfelves.

er

0

y - 0 - 8 m

.

I us T. There needs no perspective ghaffe to discern it, for neither in the treaties of Peace and Maste, in matters of Revenue, and matters of Trade, any thing hathbapned either of love on of judgement. No my Lord, shere is not any one action of their comment, great or finall, the greatmesse of themselves onely excepted.

C O It is all one, your Papers can neitire answer nor ceply, we can. Besides you tell the King no news in delivering these Complaints, so he knows as

much as can be cold him.

Iust.

lust. For the first my Lord, whereas he hath once t'e realons of things delivered him, your Lords ips shall need to be well advised , in their answers there is no forhiftry will ferve the turn, where the ludge, & the understanding are both supreme. For the fecond, to fay that i is Majefly knows, and cares not, that my Lord were but to despaire all his faithfull Subjects. But by yourfavour my Lord, we fee it is contrary, we find now that there is no fuch fingular power as there hath been, luftice is described with a Balance in her Hand, holding it even , and it hangs as even now as ever it did in any Kings dayes, for fingular authority begets but generall oppression.

Couns. Howfoever it be, thats nothing to you, that gave no interest in the Kings favour, nor perchance in his opinion, and concerning such a one, the missiking, or but misconceiving of any one hard word, phrase, or sentence, will give argument to the King either to condemne or reject the whole discouste. And howfoever his Majesty may neglect your informations, you may be sure that others (at whom you point will not neglect their revenges, you will rherefore confesse in when it is too late) that you are exceeding sory

that you have not followed my advife. Remember Cardinall Woolfey, who lost all men for the Kings fervice, & when their malice (whom he grieved) had out-lived the eKings affection; you know what became of him as evel as 1.

I u s T. Yearmy Lord, I know it well, that malice hat a longer life, than either love or thankfulneffe bath , for as we alwaies take more care to put off pain, than to enjoy pleafure, because the one hath no intermission & with the ot er we are often fatisfied, fo it is in the fmart of injury & the memory of good turns:Wrongs are written in marble: Benefits are (formes mes) acknowledged , rarely requited But my Lord, west all do tek. great wrong, to judge him by common rules, or ordinary examples, for feeing his Majesty hath greatly enriched and advanced those that have but pretended his service, no man needs to doubt of his goodnesse towards those that shall performe any thing worthy reward. Nay, the not taking knowledge of thole of his own vallals that have done him wrong, is more to be lamented, than the relinquishing of those that do him right , is to be fulpetted. I am therefore, my good Lo: held to my tefolution by these a, besides the former. The 1, that God would never have bleft

him with formany years, and in so many actions, years all his actions shad he paid his honest sevents with evill for good. The 2d. where your Lordship tels me, that I will be forty for not following your advice, I pray your Lordship to believe, that I mm no way the jest to the common formowing of worldly men, this Maxime of Plane being true; Deleasement and movement and tempor instanting. But formy body, any mind values it at nothing.

Cours What is it then you hope

for or feek?

I us T. Neither riches, nor honour, or thanks, but I onely feek to fatisfic his Majeffy (which I would have been relad to have done in matters of more importance) that I have fixed and will die mannes man.

MINFIENTS.

The Authors Epitaph, made by

Parigueris Time, which dakes in single
"Out 90 set, and boy sy und all the have,
what payer we but with a re and daft,
Which in the dark and filent game,
When we have mandred all purrousyses,
Shussaip cheffing of sarabayes t

Out from which thunband Grave, T. PAT,
What Lord shall raife me up I ernft.

Er

